

GOD'S STORY

PROPHECY – VOL. IX

PART 4

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *Book*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

GOD'S STORY

CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
INTRODUCTION	vi
BEFORE A BEGINNING	1
THE SEVENTH DAY PARADISE	7
GOD'S REST	13
SIN AND THE PRIESTHOOD	21
THE INHERITANCE	27
GOD'S TESTAMENT	35
THE LAW	43
THREE WITNESSES	55
THE FOUR GENTILE KINGDOMS	61
FOUR HUNDRED YEARS	69
THE LAST DAYS	79
GOD'S WORK	83
ONLY ONE TESTAMENT	89
ONE STORY	101
WHAT IS THE GOSPEL?	111
THE FARMERS	123
GOD'S EARTHLY HOUSES	135
GOD'S SPIRITUAL HOUSE	143
SEVENTY TIMES SEVEN	149
OLD AND THE NEW	157
THE FOUR GOSPELS	163
LUKE AND ACTS	171
THE OLD TO THE NEW TEACHING	177
JOHN'S SPIRITUAL GOSPEL	189
DEATH AND LIFE	197
PURPOSE OF SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS	207
THE MALACHI CURSE	217

TWO GREAT TRIBULATIONS	225
THE TWO MYSTERIES	235
PROPHECY FAILS!	243
WHAT IS THE CURSE?	253
ROMANS – CORINTHIANS – GALATIANS	261
THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST	279
MYSTERY OF INIQUITY	291
THE WEDDING FEAST	301

GOD'S STORY

PREFACE

The Bible is God's Story. It is prophecy which becomes history. God had The Bible written as a testimony or witness for humanity. It is God's plan to have His Son, Jesus, save the WORLD (I John 4:14).

God's Story tells you how God carries out His purpose to be ALL and IN ALL (I Corinthians 15:28). This story does not cover The Bible in totality but the story from the garden in Eden to the new paradise in the new heaven and new earth where God makes ALL THINGS NEW. To aid your Bible study it is helpful to visualize the complete picture or story. When you do a math problem, a vital principal to understand is that the WHOLE is the SUM TOTAL of its PARTS. May God bless your personal Bible study when understanding the WHOLE STORY from beginning to end.

No monies can ever be accepted, but feel free to offer any comments or criticisms. Ask for your free CD containing eleven books which you can read on your computer. Also, feel free to ask biblical questions by mail or e-mail.

Art Mokarow
Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356

E-mail: art@mokarow.com
Web site: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

Download all books free of charge

<i>God's Puzzle Solved</i>	<i>The Original Bible</i>	<i>God's Sabbath And Holy Days</i>
<i>God's Work</i>	<i>Discovering God</i>	
<i>Revelation Uncovered</i>	<i>Faith With Works</i>	Children's Books
<i>Christ In You</i>	<i>God's Story</i>	<i>God's Two Trees</i>
<i>The Great Apostasy</i>	<i>Bible Study Made Easy</i>	<i>God's Magical Ten Words</i>
<i>The White Throne Judgment</i>	<i>God's Will</i>	<i>God's Three Houses</i>

INTRODUCTION TO GOD'S STORY

Kind After Kind

Once upon a time a man asked me an extremely pertinent question. "Why does God bother?" He was referring to the creation of the universe and all that humanity has to go through. Why did God even bother to create everything?

With all the prevalent evil and human suffering including innocent children, why does God allow it? God allows you to live your life but he has a master blueprint whereby you will have your designated individual spot when you receive eternal life.

The Wrong Question

Many publish books and preach why you were born. This question is putting the cart before the horse. To find out why humans were put on this earth, you need to ask, "What is it that God is doing?" God answers the question, in part, in Ephesians 1:3-6. Paul told **the saints** and **the faithful** that **God has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places "in Christ."** It is through Christ that God blesses everyone from heaven. What are these blessings? Ephesians 1:4 Paul said God intends to make everyone **holy and without blame** or perfect like He is (Matthew 5:48). God said, "**Let us make man in our image**" (Genesis 1:26).

Besides looking like God, Christ is also to make you **Holy** and **blameless** like God. Why is God making you like Him?

It Is God's Pleasure

God starts to reveal Himself in Ephesians 1:5. It is God's very **will** or **purpose** to make you like Him, Holy and blameless because it gives God pleasure. There is **part of your answer** as to

why God is doing what He is doing. God had fun or great satisfaction in creating the universe and mankind. For what purpose? So, you could be like Him.

Then in Ephesians 1:9 God reports this “**will**” of His, (which has given Him great pleasure) is actually a great mystery, The Mystery of His Will.

God predestinated or pre-planned this mystery so you could obtain an inheritance according to His purpose who makes it happen according to His own counsel of His own “**will**” (Ephesians 4:11).

The theme of *God’s Story, The Bible*, is to make you like God by and through His Son, Jesus by God’s Holy Spirit. This theme is an inheritance, a gift from God. You are to receive salvation by becoming like God, The Father through Christ. God will not give you salvation as a gift of inheritance unless you become Holy like Him through Christ. This is the only way everyone can live in paradise in God’s love. You are about to find out why God receives pleasure in making you as He is.

God Is Agàpè Love

I John 4:8 declares, “**He that [agàpè] loveth not knoweth not God; for God is [agàpè] love.**” There it is. One does not even know the true God if they do not have God’s agàpè love. This is a very special love. I Corinthians 12:31 states that the most excellent gift is agàpè love (I Corinthians 13:13). Why?

Charity or agàpè love never fails (I Corinthians 13:8-13). This love is eternal. Once one has it, as God has, it never ceases or stops. It is eternal, forever. What is different *about this* love?

This “love” is more than passion, “eros” in Greek or more than “philia” in Greek, or “friendliness,” which is “compatibility.”

This love, agàpè is defined by Christ in John 15:13, “**Greater love [agàpè] hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friend.**” Agàpè love is so strong one is willing to give up their very life or existence. This truth is the most excellent gift God can give as He gave His only begotten Son for all mankind. It is God’s “will!”

The Answer

Why does making you Holy and blameless give God pleasure? God has pleasure because God has agàpè love. Nothing gives God so much pleasure because He loves you so much. That is why God allows evil and human suffering because it leads you, eventually to Christ and finally God’s agàpè love which is eternal.

Once God’s agàpè love is “in you,” you then become like God, Your Father and His Son, Jesus (Hebrews 1:1-3). God’s love “in you” reveals The True God who is love and then He can give you the gift of eternal life. Why? Because Romans 13:10 manifests, “**Love [agàpè] worketh no ill to his neighbor; therefore [agàpè] love is the fulfilling of the law.**”

WOW! God is agàpè love and He must give **His all** to you through His Son, Jesus. It gives God pleasure because it is God’s “will” to give all He is and all He has. That is the answer to the man who asked me, “Why is God going to all this trouble?” God derives pleasure from giving, being agàpè love, God must give all He is and has. You are now ready to read how God fulfills His “will.”

God’s Purpose

God’s Story reveals how God gives eternal life to mankind who, then, can become like Him: Holy and Perfect. By so doing they have God’s agàpè love, which is eternal. They, then, can be given the gift of salvation because God knows you will always do **good**

to God and all His creation.

In faith you must prove God's love by His Holy Spirit. Romans 5:5 promises, "**And hope maketh not ashamed; because the [agapè] love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us.**" There it is, even God's agapè love is a gift which makes you like God and Christ. Once you have that agapè love you can receive salvation as an inherited gift and then you can live in paradise forever. Now notice, God's purpose plainly stated in the scriptures, I Corinthians 15:22 "**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.** [Then] "**But every man in His own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming**" (I Corinthians 15:23). God has a pre-planned order for every human and that order is listed in I Corinthians 15:24-27. Christ must defeat all of God's enemies, including death, then Jesus returns all He has inherited, back to The Father to have complete authority again for a very good purpose. I Corinthians 15:28 declares, "**And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.**" God's purpose is to make everyone just like God which is what God intended from the beginning in Genesis 1:26 and Hebrews 1:1-3. God is reproducing Himself through Christ.

Before you are ready to read *God's Story*, you need to prove how Christ saves everyone in their order.

God's Kingdom Is A Marriage

You now know God's purpose is to reproduce Himself through His Son, Jesus, The Christ. You can prove The Kingdom of God is all about a royal marriage. Mark 1:1 declares, "**The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.**" In Greek, *The Gospel* is defined as Good News. This Good News is about Jesus,

The Christ. Why? Because Christ is the author or beginning of salvation. You will see in *God's Story* Jesus must prove Himself worthy to be The Christ, The Groom or Husband of the wife.

Jesus states in Matthew 22:2, “**The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, [God] which made a marriage for his Son.**” The Kingdom of Heaven is God’s **kingdom** which you will prove is God’s **kingdom** brought to the earth at the time of The New Heaven and New Earth. This will be The Marriage Feast which never ends, when Christ marries His Bride.

Matthew 22:1-14 covers the entire *Bible* from Genesis to Revelation. This is *God's Story* which begins with this Royal Marriage and concludes with the consummation of The Marriage Feast when God, The Father, comes down from heaven to dwell with man in The New Heaven and Earth **eternally**. *The Book of Life* is a *Marriage Registry* of everyone who is invited to attend. Only those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are excluded from attending The Marriage Feast because they have the wrong “**wedding garment.**” Only those properly attired can come to the marriage. The proper wedding garment is “**the righteousness of the saints.**” (Revelation 19:8).

God's Story covers the preparation of The Groom to be worthy for the marriage as well as The Bride. Christ prepares His Bride to be worthy for The Marriage. It is God, our Father who decides when both The Groom and The Bride are ready for marriage (Acts 1:7).

When Christ Returns

Over the years some Christians have tried to determine the date or time of Christ’s return to receive His Bride. Acts 1:7 clearly states only God, The Father can know when Jesus will return for His Bride. Still, some preachers believe they can do what only

God, The Father can do. That is why Deuteronomy 18 declares they are false prophets. Now to find out why no man or even Christ or the angels can know the date.

Matthew 16 And 17

Just before it was time for Christ to be crucified, He started to warn His Disciples about His death and resurrection. Then He asked His Disciples who the people **say** He is. They said, John, The Baptist, Elijah, Jeremiah or one of The Prophets. Christ then asked, **“Who do you say I am?”** Peter responded, **“Thou art [Jesus] the Christ, the [very] son of the living God.”** Jesus retorted, **“flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee [you], but my Father which is in heaven.** Because God revealed to Peter who was The Christ (Anointed One) Jesus said that Peter had the keys to the **kingdom**. What was the key to the **kingdom**? That is why Jesus said Peter had **the keys** because God revealed it to Peter. The last verse, Matthew 16:28, Christ prophesied, **“Verily I say unto you, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom.”** Some were to see Christ’s second coming before they died. When did this happen?

Matthew 17 reveals that only Peter, James and John were with Jesus and saw Him in His **glorified form** at His **second coming** talking to Moses and Elijah. This was a future vision of this event on The Holy Mountain, The Mount of Olives.

Notice what God said to Peter, James and John: **“While he yet spake, behold a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him”** (Matthew 17:5). Before their death, in vision, they witnessed the second coming of Christ. Why? After James was martyred, only Peter and John were left to be witnesses to Christ’s second coming. The voice out of the

cloud said, “**listen to what My Son tells you.**” About what? It is when Jesus will return to receive His Bride.

More Sure Word Of Prophecy

II Peter 1:16-18 declares since he and John were eyewitnesses of His (Christ’s) Majesty when out of the cloud the voice came for them to listen to Jesus. Peter was manifesting that Peter, James and John already saw **the second coming** of Christ and now were eyewitnesses of His **return**.

Because Peter and John saw the vision, they knew when Christ would **return** and Peter therefore said, “**We have also a more sure [certain] word of prophecy**” (II Peter 1:19). It was God’s Holy Spirit who reveals **the truth** of Christ’s **second coming**. What did Peter and John hear from Jesus about His second coming (II Peter 1:20-21)?

The subject is when will Jesus return (II Peter 3:8-11). He answers and states Christ’s coming can be one day or a thousand years away (with God a thousand years is one day). Amazingly, God has not set a date. The ignorance of man is he is always trying to assign a date to every occurrence. However, Jesus told them God had not determined a date or time, only an event. What is that event?

In II Peter 3:9 Peter prophesies that His second coming will occur when The Father sees that no one would perish but that all come to repentance. Remember, Peter revealed his prophecy was certain. God has no set date for this **universal event**. God allows **free choice for salvation**. Whether it is before the **new heaven and earth** or after God’s **kingdom** comes. The **opportunity and potential** is always available to everyone. Why? Because salvation requires **faith** and **faith** involves believing God’s **will**. God’s **will**, as I John 4:14 states, is that God sent His Son into the **world**

to save it. We either believe or not. That is our **free choice**. God has **an order of salvation** for every man (I Corinthians 15) and God will not have Jesus **return** until all of I Corinthians 15 takes place. What is it that must happen for Jesus, The Christ to **return**?

Christ's Revelation To John

What does The Apostle, John have to say in *The Book of Revelation*? "*Revelation*," the "apocalypse" in Greek, means "the uncovering" or "unveiling." An unveiling has to do when The Groom comes for The Bride because something has happened. An unveiling shows The Bride as she really is. No longer is she veiled or covered.

Revelation 5 declares that no man is worthy to open **the seven seals** to reveal what *The Book of Revelation* prophesies. John, The Apostle is weeping. Why? "**Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindred's of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen**" (Revelation 1:7).

John wept because no man was worthy to unveil **the seven seals** of Revelation. When Christ **returns** and completes God's **purpose** then God will be "**all and in all**." Wow! Only when Christ (**the slain Lamb**) is worthy to unveil **the seven seals**, and only then, His return will be revealed (Revelation 5).

Remember, when Jesus died, the veil was rent in The Holy Place of The Temple and from that time all mankind has access to God. Now, The Bride has access to The Father in The Holy Place through Christ.

The wedding is about to take place as **the millennium** begins when Christ and His Bride invites everyone to The Wedding

Feast. When does Jesus **return** to meet His Bride? Revelation 19:7 gives the answer. “**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.**” There is the answer from Jesus to The Apostle, John. First, Christ had to be worthy by His sacrifice. This act proves Christ’s **agàpè love** for His Bride. Now, The Bride has made herself ready by, also, being willing to give her life for Jesus, The Groom, by having God’s **love (agàpè)**. The Father declares The Groom and The Bride to be worthy for The Marriage Feast.

When does Jesus return? When God, The Father sees His Son, Jesus is worthy to be The Groom by His love for the wife and when The Bride makes herself ready by loving her husband, Jesus, just as He loves her.

Then, and only then, by this event, can The Father determine the date of The Wedding Feast. It could be any day or thousands of years, it all depends upon the worthiness of The Bride since The Groom has already qualified.

Now for *God’s Story* to begin from **the marriage** in The Garden of Eden till The Marriage Feast in The Kingdom of God.

CHAPTER 1

BEFORE A BEGINNING

God's Story is truly God's very own "story" or a history of His "plan." It is written as a witness in judgment of humanities' failure to rule themselves peaceably or to have a society of bliss and happiness. It is also a story of free choice. The choice to either follow The One True God or not. Not following God will lead to death. On the other hand, following God allows you to live in a paradise and have eternal life.

You might question some of God's reasons for creating the universe with all its billions of inhabitants. Why did He bother? Couldn't God just have made you perfect like He is, right from the beginning? He could have, but then God would not have a family fashioned after Him. God has absolute free choice to do whatever He wants. He also has the power to do anything and everything He decides to do. For you to be like God, The Father, you must also have free choice. You must want to be like Jesus and The Father or God cannot give **the gift of eternal life**. But you couldn't choose just any choices, your **choices** would have to be all the **right choices**. To be able to live in a community with happy people eternally, everyone would have to become perfect and Holy.

Anything "less" would create chaos and finally cause destruction which would lead to death. God's Story is "a perfect story" and the only path a society could take to be able to live in eternal bliss. This story is without a flaw and is absolutely perfect. The clearest

proof of God's truth is **the plan** He formulated which, in itself, is perfect and doesn't contain any flaws. That is proof in itself.

God's Pleasure

God reveals that He **PREDESTINATED** His whole and complete **plan**. It was God's "**will**" or "**purpose**" to **save** or give eternal paradise to everyone in the world (Ephesians I). That is why Christ came in the first place (I John 4:14). Before there was ever a beginning, there was only God. There was no **space** or **time**, as God had not created anyone or anything in His creation. God consists of **light** and "**in Him**" is **no darkness** (I John 1:5). There was only God and His "**light**" and His "**glory**."

The Greek word for "love" is "agàpè" (I John 4:8). Why is God bothering to go to all this work of **creation** to eventually have a **kingdom**? This **kingdom** is to be ruled by a royal family. God's purpose is to be "All and in All" (I Corinthians 15:28). A **kingdom** of eternal happiness. God predestinated this **free choice plan** because it gives God **PLEASURE** to **plan** and see it through to the finish (Ephesians 1:5). Why does God receive pleasure from building this **royal kingdom** of sons and daughters? The answer is God is **LOVE** (I John 4:8).

This **LOVE** is a special "love." It goes beyond a passion, emotion or friendliness. God's "**love**" is "agàpè" or **CHARITY**. Charity is a type of love that gives **the giver** immense pleasure. God loves to give. That is why Jesus said, "**it is more blessed to give than to receive.**" God is the most giving "**being**" there is or ever will be. God's whole **essence**, **heart** and **will** is to be generous. You, yourself, find when you continually buy things for yourself, in time you find you have accumulated too much junk. After the initial pleasure, continually buying more for yourself, starts to get

boring. Giving to others is eternal or without **end**. This alone discloses what the true God is all about. He is always in a state of continually wanting to give. He is always in a **state of giving**. When there is no one else but God, it would have contradicted God's very being and nature. That is why God went to the trouble to create the universe, with inhabitants, animals and all the rest of creation. He must share all that He is, as it is the only **RIGHTEOUS** thing He can do. But to have an eternal paradise, God must be "All and In All." You must become just like Him.

Kind After Kind

An important point to note about God is when He gives, He must give to "kind after kind." To experience all the happiness and goodness of God, He had to create "beings" just as He is (Genesis 1:26). It was not merely to guarantee paradise "eternally" but to give to those who have the full or complete capacity to understand and know God's "**plan**" for eternal happiness. There you have it. His creation must learn to be completely giving or to be able to sacrifice themselves. This is the very character of God and He gave the same characteristics to His Son (Hebrews 1:1-3). His creation also must have an attitude of giving. God decided to build a family in His "likeness" which will guarantee He will continue to give eternal pleasure and joy. God, before any beginning, predetermined this most wonderful plan of His so He could become "ALL and IN ALL" (I Corinthians 15:28). This is God's **plan**. His family kingdom must become just as He is, so everyone can have the capacity to live forever in paradise and in eternal bliss.

The Plan

God had the wisdom not to make His first man and woman "ma-

ture” or “**perfect.**” Who would want a robot? God’s “kind” must have free choice. His creation must have unconditional liberty, like God! Secondly, Adam and Eve could not have been made eternal before God knew they would make all the right choices. They had to follow their Father’s example and His **very way or path** for them.

To be able to live eternally in paradise, God’s plan had conditions which required FAITH having total TRUST in Him. For this reason, God predestinated you would be made corruptible or susceptible to death. Now this matter of choosing **the right path** becomes real. When you know your choices can lead to death, your primary motivation becomes a matter of survival. Evolution determines “survival of the fittest” which consists of man’s human nature. By God giving humans the opportunity of free choice, He gives the very toughest test of free choice mankind ever had to encounter. Only God could have planned such a brilliant plan and mankind will one day begin to comprehend.

God laid out His strategy and plan. When you have “a choice” then it demands you have options. To be able to live or die becomes a very vital objective. What kind of environment did God need to create, to allow free choice when “life” is desired first and foremost? God had to make sure His future family would want to choose “life eternal” rather than death, so He had to make the environment very desirable and appealing.

A Wedding

God likens His Son, Jesus and **the church** as a marriage (Matthew 22). They need to become **one flesh**. Jesus and His Father are “**one**” and now **the church** is **one** with The Father and The Son (John 17:21). You, yourself, become **one** with The Son and The

Father. You are in the family of God and will inherit God's riches and all of God's "glory." You, as an heir, are an inheritor of God's riches and glory. You will be in His household, The Household of God (II Timothy 2:19-21).

When any of The Israelites (Tribes of Israel) got married, the bride and groom took their vows under a canopy. This "canopy" or "covering" pictures God's blessings which serve as a protection. As husband and wife, they become "one" under God's "tent" or "tabernacle." They are in The Household of God. The Israelites call this "canopy" a "huppah" or "covering." When the **wedding feast** of Christ and His Bride takes place in the **new heaven** and the **new earth**, The Groom and Bride will dwell in The Father's house in New Jerusalem. They will benefit from all of God's **riches**. They are under God's "**huppah**" or "**covering**" (Revelation 21 and 22).

The Dispensation

After the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D., The Jews had to flee Jerusalem. Both The Jews and Christians were under persecution from Rome. Christianity from that time, became corrupt just as The Jews had corrupted themselves (Revelation 2 and 3). Jude, Christ's half brother and brother of James, "The Just," issued a warning to Christians to return to the **faith** once delivered to the **saints** (Jude 3).

Paul explained to The Ephesian Church what the **faith was, which was** delivered to the **saints** (Ephesians 1:1-3). Paul declares God's "**will**" to the saints which He had **predetermined** before the earth was created. God has **willed** that you become Holy and perfect just as He is. This gives God great pleasure because God is "**love**" and He will only **give** to His own kind (Ephesians 1:4-8).

Paul continues and reveals God's "**will**" or "**testament**" is a mystery and only discloses all this to **His saints**. Why? Like any "**will**" only the **witnesses** know "the will" even exists. To the rest, it is a **mystery** until it is **enforced**.

Then Paul refers to the **dispensation** when the time is fulfilled or complete. The word "dispensation" in Greek is "oikonoma." This definition means "**administration of a house or property.**" The ultimate dispensing of God's riches or estate takes place when all things will come to pass by Christ, "the **administrator**" and "**executor**" of God's "**will**" for His "**estate.**"

At the end, when "**the will**" is enacted, Christ will have conquered all God's enemies, including death. Then "**all**" will be "in Christ" and Jesus will turn over His **entire inheritance** back to God, The Father, who then **will** be "**all and in all**" (Hebrews 1:1-2 and I Corinthians 15:28). This is exactly what Paul reveals in God's "**will**" as stated in Ephesians 1:10. Read all of I Corinthians 15.

Christians having the **faith** or knowing the **will** of God from this point will be **witnesses** of His "**will**" and "**testament.**" This is the theme in God's story with Jesus, The Christ as "**the executor**" of God's "**will.**"

God intends to give all the riches of His estate (house) to everyone "in Christ" at **the dispensation**. For a more in depth understanding, read *The White Throne Judgment*.

CHAPTER 2

THE SEVENTH-DAY PARADISE

In the beginning, God created the heaven and earth. At this point, God's Spirit saw the earth He had created was void and without form. God's Spirit moved over the waters (Genesis 1:1-2). The earth was already existing, but the waters were covering the entire earth along with the atmosphere or the heavens. What did God do next?

The Canopy

The earth was to be God's **house** where humans could dwell. Out of the entire universe, this was God's chosen environment for His **creation**. This earth did not have to be the largest planet, but had to be the right size for the family God intended to have. It took God seven days to make the earth as the right environment to fulfill His **plan** (Genesis 1:31). Remember, the universe had already been created in another time-frame sometime in the past (Genesis 1:1-2).

The creation of the earth, at this particular time, was to only fulfill God's goals to give humans free choice but with limited life, so they could learn by their own volition to be like God. Since God is **light** with no **darkness**, God created day and night so part of the earth could be revealed. It had an **environment** where humanity had to choose between light to see reality or be blind, living in darkness and confusion. In the day, there was **light**, enabling man to see. At night, mankind could not see what or where they were.

Light reveals **truth** and **darkness** hides evil. The earth was made to reflect both **good** and **evil** or **light** and **darkness**. Humanity had the choice to choose life or death. It was up to God to reveal **life** or **death** whichever they chose. Once God created this perfect environment for their free choice, then humanity could decide.

That is why God grew The Tree of Life and The Tree of Good and Evil. Adam and Eve had complete “**free choice**” from the very beginning. To complete this ideal plan of free choice, God first manifested an intense LIGHT which became the first day. Because the earth rotated, the daytime hours only manifested light during the day. As the earth rotated and the light force was hidden from that part of the earth, it was called night. Now the earth was in continual light during the day with darkness at night, depicting both **good** and **evil**.

The intense light from the first day initiated a process of **evaporation** and the waters were divided between the heaven (or atmosphere) and the earth. The waters on the earth turned into oceans, lakes and rivers.

As the waters rose higher, evaporating into the atmosphere, it made the air much colder, forming clouds. You now have a visual reality of the atmosphere and the earth. This was God’s “**canopy**” or “**huppah**” or the “atmosphere,” which God gave humanity to live under. This was God’s house where humans could dwell and prosper. Out of the entire universe and as science today acknowledges, there is no place in the universe like it. All the elements for **life** are here and there is no other place like it. It is truly God’s “canopy” or “tent” under which humans could live. The rest of the universe was in abject space or darkness. The galaxies gave their **glory** from their **suns** as brilliant diamonds in a sea of darkness. There is no place like the earth as a backdrop for God’s

special family of sons and daughters. During these six days, God arranged the earth to function for the good of humanity. During those six days, God arranged the days, months and years to be in sync with His very **purpose** and **plan**.

The very seasons manifest **God's purpose**. Spring pictures the **resurrection** of life. Summer, **the growing season**. Fall is the great **harvest**. Winter pictures **death**. Even the heavens reveal God's intentions, as **the sun** gives life just as Christ, represents the sun as **The Groom** and the moon as The Bride (Psalm 19). The sun and the moon represent a **bright** light as **good** and a **lesser** light as the darkness of space as evil. The moon represents humanity, light in one half and darkness in the other. Light is for **truth** and darkness for evil.

Adam And Eve

On the earth, God selected a specific place, The Garden of Eden. This **garden** was the perfect place in which humanity could live and dwell. It truly was “**a paradise**.” Adam was **the first son** God created for this paradise and Eve came from Adam's body. Truly both of them were one, “bone of bone” and “flesh of flesh” which could not be divorced because they were “one.” They were married forever. At this point there was no death because death could only occur from sin (Romans 6:23). As long as Adam and Eve did not sin, they could have lived forever in **paradise**.

It was all a matter of choice. God gave the first man an opportunity to live forever in paradise. The reason God put The Tree of Life in **the garden** was for Adam and Eve to choose “**life**” and not “**death**.” Man could have lived in perfection from the beginning. The choice was for them to make (Genesis 1 to 3). This **garden** was God's **kingdom** on earth, from the very beginning. “**Every-**

thing was very good" (Genesis 1:31).

Life And Death

God did not create death. Death can only occur from sin. Why does sin lead to death? The process of sinning literally contradicts God's very nature. Why? The reason is, God is "**love**" (I John 4:8). Since you are to be The Sons of God, then as **sons**, you must have God's type of **love**. But remember this "**love**" has to be **the biblical type of "love"** which is "*agàpè*." The word "*agàpè*" in Greek is "a completely giving type of love" which would never cause any harm to God or God's creation. When you have this "love" you will, then, be **perfect**. Since they were created, Adam and Eve had not sinned. They were considered perfect in God's eyes. They were God's **sons**.

In the beginning, the **creation** of Adam and Eve was considered **very good** (Genesis 1:31). To sin is to cause God and His creation harm. Harmful humans cause chaos, misery and violence in any environment. God could never give **eternal life** to "beings" who had "power" to live forever. By creating a temporal creation, God in His wisdom gave humanity a choice to choose "**life**" or "**death**." If man chooses sin, then death enters because God had to protect His **plan**. Humanity had to choose and have absolute **faith** and **trust** in God. God is Holy (pure), perfect and without sin. God does not produce anything less than "**love**." "**Love**" is the **bond of perfection** (Colossians 3:14). God's "**love**" will never cause any harm.

Death must follow sin because SIN results in a society headed for destruction. You must, therefore, choose to have complete **faith** and **trust** in **your** Father, so you can be just like His Son, Jesus. Remember, Jesus is an exact duplicate of God (Hebrews 1:1-3).

This leads to God's supreme purpose for Him to be "**all and in all**" (I Corinthians 15:28). This is God's **work** and **purpose**. By God being "**all and in all**," humans would be in God's **exact image** as His Son, Jesus. Then all of God's **creation** will have **perfect "love"** and He can then give His supreme gift of grace, which is **eternal life**. You will then live in **paradise** and be filled with "agàpè love" **eternally**. This is God's "**story**" which is **to save the world** by His Son, Jesus, The Christ (I John 4:14).

This book *God's Story* will tell you how God gave mankind the **free choice** to become like Him, so He can bestow the gift of **eternal life in paradise**. This gift of choice for **life** was given to Adam and Eve on that **seventh day** when God **rested** from all His **work**. God then **hallowed the seventh day** when Adam and Eve entered God's **rest**.

CHAPTER 3

GOD'S REST

Many believe the seventh day “rest” in The Garden of Eden was man’s “rest day” from work. God did not expect Adam and Eve to rest because they hadn’t done any “of the work” in the previous six days. It was God’s “day of rest” because only He created that paradise. In *God’s Story* it was God who rested because He did “the work.” Man can enter God’s rest, but it is only God who did and does “the work.” Man ceases from his work by allowing God to do “the work” (Hebrews 4).

A Rest

During this initial **seventh day rest**, God was the one who had done all “the work” by literally creating **paradise**. Adam and Eve did not do any of **the work**. God was giving a **gift** to Adam and Eve, an opportunity to live in paradise – **eternally**. They only had to **trust** God **faithfully** and live by **every Word of God**. God’s **kingdom**, in **the garden**, was His form of rulership and He proclaimed “**all**” was very good. God’s kingdom is a **kingdom** of free choice which means complete liberty.

What was God’s “**word**?” God had **two trees** in The Garden of Eden. One tree, The Tree of Life, God allowed Adam and Eve to be able to live in paradise **forever**. The other tree, The Tree of Good and Evil, was only promising **death**. If they ate The Tree of Life, it would have guaranteed they could have lived by every

Word of God, forever. This would have showed an act of **faith** by Adam and Eve. On the other hand, The Tree of Good and Evil would prove their **lack of faith** in their Father. They, on their own, chose to decide what was **right** and **wrong** by their own natural human instincts.

This was The First Covenant or **contract** with God. To receive **eternal life** in paradise, the **contract** of God demanded that God alone would do the work and absolutely no work would have to be done by any human being. If Adam and Eve had **faith**, trusting God and living by every “**word**” commanded, they could have remained in paradise eternally. God offered this **covenant** at the very beginning. **Righteousness** of The Letter of The Law could never give **eternal life** or **salvation**. How good one is – is never the issue, but as always how much faith one has in God, The Father, The Creator. Salvation can only come through **faith**. Living **righteously** gives a good life or existence. But, only **faith** and complete trust in God could give **salvation** or **eternal life**. Eternal life was only possible by God doing **the work** for Adam and Eve. God is **the only one** who can do **the work** to make everyone perfect and Holy as He is. The **choice to choose faith** was theirs to make. You may ask, why didn't God make you perfect in the beginning? In reality He did, with one catch. He gave “**free choice**.” God gave free choice because God made man in His image and God has free choice (Genesis 1:26). They could have eaten of The Tree of Life and lived forever. God guaranteed it.

God gave Adam and Eve a responsibility or charge over their human environment. Either mankind preserved “**the work**” God did or they did not. That was Adam and Eve's choice (Genesis 1:26-28). If everything God gave them as a **gift** was kept perfectly, they would have lived in that **paradise** forever. The Tree of Life was there, so the choice was theirs to make and, sure enough, they

made the wrong choice (Genesis 2:9).

Eve believed Satan's lie that she wouldn't die when she ate the forbidden fruit. Her **lust** was greater than her **faith** in God. Adam, also, lacked **faith** in God; and because he loved his wife, he ate **the fruit of death** as well. Adam wasn't deceived but couldn't resist his wife (I Timothy 2:14). Since they followed Satan and believed him, they looked to him as their Father (John 8:41-44). They honored Satan and not their real Father, God.

When God discovered their sin, He told Adam and Eve their future. Eve was now under her master, Adam, because she couldn't be trusted. Adam would become responsible to take care of their needs for survival. However, they would be under a curse from God. Satan turned into **being a snake** who was deceitful and poisonous. From that time on, Satan would constantly seek to be an enemy of Adam and Eve and their posterity.

However, to eventually save mankind, a future seed would have to be born who would destroy Satan and restore paradise back to Adam and Eve and every person who had been born (Genesis 3:15 and I Corinthians 15:22). This is the theme or story of *The Bible*. God's **will** or **testament** is to restore God's **kingdom** of rest through **the promised seed**, Jesus, The Christ. Christ is **the promised seed to save the world** (I John 4:14).

Sin Entered

When Adam and Eve sinned or caused an offense by distrusting God, a tremendous change occurred. God had to issue His decree upon Adam, Eve and Satan also. Adam and Eve would have to struggle to survive as any animal in the wilderness. This was God's **second covenant** in The Law or Torah.

Satan originally was God's beautiful cherub, only to become a deceitful poisonous snake trying to put a stumbling block in Adam and Eve's and their children's path (Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28). But Satan wanted to be worshipped (Matthew 4). Ultimately, a child would be born from Adam and Eve's progeny who would restore paradise and The Tree of Life or **salvation**. When Adam and Eve sinned, with paradise being lost (God's rest), so was **salvation** lost. The Tree of Life was no longer available. Sin, however, ushered in an even greater loss, when God, Himself, was lost to mankind.

Adam and Eve were expelled from The Garden so they would not have access to The Tree of Life or be able to **live forever**. Satan was now their Father. God no longer dwelt with them in the garden. God placed two cherub angels to guard **the way into the garden** and The Tree of Life (Genesis 3). Now God did not remove Adam and Eve from The Land of Eden or pleasantness, but didn't allow them **access** to The Garden and The Tree of Life. This was where God dwelt. The way back to **the garden** could only occur thousands of years later by one of Adam and Eve's posterity. The next event has **great spiritual depth** in *God's Story* with the birth of Adam and Eve's first two children, Cain and Abel. Why did God include the story about this birth and the act between Cain and Abel?

God's House And The World

Because of sin, Adam and Eve along with their children lost **salvation**. Access to The Tree of Life was forbidden. *God's Story* makes a monumental change from this point in world history. Adam and Eve, as well as their children, have had to wait until **the promised seed** (Christ) came to restore The Tree of Life and **salvation**. Paradise was truly lost and **death** now reigned upon

all of Adam and Eve's future generations. All of Adam and Eve's progeny sinned because God did not dwell with them (Romans 6:23). It is exactly what Paul prophesied (I Corinthians 15:22-23). However, Adam and Eve, as well as their children, lived in Eden, **the land of pleasantness**. Cain and Abel both were in Eden and knew they could never enter **the garden** where The Tree of Life was located. Cain and Abel knew all about the **gospel of the kingdom**. Their parents had lived in it (Genesis 1:31).

God was still available and spoke to Cain and Abel through **the angel** of The Lord. God, at this time, did not hide Himself from Adam and Eve's two children. As yet they hadn't sinned. Remember, it is from Adam and Eve's children that **paradise** would be restored, then the **promised seed** would come (Genesis 3:15). After the birth of Cain and Abel, time passed until the two sons attained the age of responsibility. Cain was a truck farmer and Abel was a shepherd raising sheep. Man from this point, because of Adam and Eve's sin, had to do the work themselves. Adam and Eve's sin did not cause humanity to be guilty of sin. It is your own sin which brings the death penalty. Adam and Eve's sin or offence lost paradise where The Tree of Life was. God no longer dwelt with them. Eternity was lost until Christ would come a second time. God, then, will dwell "in you" as His temple or house (Hebrews 3).

This seems to be such an uneventful account in which Cain was a farmer and Abel a shepherd. But *God's Story* is about to reveal a significant change in world affairs. *The Bible*, up to this time, has God's presence still with Adam and Eve and their children (Genesis 4). Since they were not in the garden where God provided everything, Adam and Eve and their family had to do "**the work**" of providing for themselves. Cain grew farm products and Abel herded sheep. **Survival of the fittest** prevailed as with any ani-

mal. Keep in mind, humanity and animals were both created the sixth day. Humans are of the animal kingdom and both struggle to survive. The Tree of Life was gone. God was no longer with them.

When Adam and Eve sinned, God allowed them free choice to choose between **right** or **wrong** on their own. It was then up to mankind to do “**the work**” in their own way. They rejected God’s “**work**,” so then God allowed man to do whatever they thought was **good** or **right**. Adam and his family were no longer in God’s **kingdom**.

The human family still lived on God’s land but they were now on their own. They left God’s paradise on earth where God had done all the work. No longer were they in God’s **rest**. From this point on, they would do **the work** to be able to survive (no Tree of Life) and had to take their own **rest** from any or all of their labors.

God’s Work And Man’s Work

Since Adam and his family were now on their own, doing “**the work**” to be able to survive, they were ready for another world shaking event to take place. Cain and Abel were at the age of accountability and no longer under their parent’s responsibility. A monumental **world event** was ready to occur.

Adam Was Sold Short

Why did God from this point choose Adam, a man, to be over Eve as her master thus becoming his property?

In I Timothy 2:14, Paul revealed to Timothy that Adam wasn’t deceived when he ate from the Tree of Good and Evil. It was Eve

who was deceived because of her desire for the fruit so she could decide right from wrong on her own as a God. Adam knew better and could have gone and eaten from The Tree of Life and lived forever. Instead, since he loved her, because she was bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh, Adam was willing to die with her in this human life. This is exactly why Paul said in Ephesians 5:28, **“So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.”**

This is exactly what Adam did. Then Paul explains Adam’s actions by saying, **“Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude [likeness] of Adam’s transgression, who is the figure [Christ] of him that was to come”** (Romans 5:14).

Adam died for his wife because he loved her as Christ, who was to die for mankind. Christ also died for His Bride. Adam, who knew better, chooses death to be with his wife just as Christ. Adam could have gone to The Tree of Life and received eternity but he chose death. Adam was a type of Christ.

That is why Paul concludes in Ephesians 5:32, **“This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.”**

Now, you have the answer as to why all mankind from this point in history and prophecy must do the work instead of God, because it was Adam and Eve’s choice!

The entire *Bible* story surrounds this royal marriage between Adam and Eve’s seed becoming The Groom waiting for **the church, His Bride, to get herself ready. Then all will be able to live forever, together in God’s household. His paradise of rest.**

CHAPTER 4

SIN AND THE PRIESTHOOD

Sin entered the world when Adam and Eve sinned and God would no longer allow Adam and his family to live in His rest or paradise. They were then responsible for their own sustenance and survival. God's kingdom was lost. God would not dwell with them. They were no longer in God's "house." Why did God make this choice?

Paradise

Isaiah, The Prophet, as one of God's messengers, makes an astounding revelation and warns Israel that He would no longer be their **Savior** or even listen to them. Why? "**Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save**" (Isaiah 59:1). Can you understand what God is saying? God relates that He could **save** everyone He wants to **save**. God can **save** the whole world no matter what they may have done during their lifetime. But there is a reason He refuses to **save** or hear an individual's pleas.

God's House And The World

"But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid His face from you, that he will not hear." God leaves willful sinners to themselves and doesn't even hear their prayers. Cain and Abel had not sinned as yet. However, because of Adam and Eve's sins, God now would not allow Adam and his family to stay in God's **rest** or allow **salvation**. Why?

Because they had sinned, thus disgracing themselves. Cain and Abel were still partly in God's **rest** since they were still in the **promised land, Eden**. They were not in **the wilderness**. Cain and Abel were in God's rest (Eden), just as Israel under Joshua entered God's rest. Nevertheless, Cain and Abel had to do the work.

Now Cain and Abel had to wait for **the promised seed**, The Christ, to restore God's complete **rest**. Both of them knew *The Gospel* or The Good News of The Restoration to Paradise. They knew because their parents had told them. God told them **The Gospel** and they lived it. God had completed His "**work**" or His "**kingdom**" from the foundation of the world (Hebrews 4:3-5). When? On The **Seventh** Day God had Adam and Eve in paradise or God's **rest**. When The Kingdom of God was completed for Adam and Eve, they turned their backs on their Father by sinning. They had to leave God's "house" and His protection.

God had to remove them from His "kingdom of rest" and Adam, with his family, had to work to survive. That was the curse for their lack of **faith** in God. They **spiritually** broke The Fifth Commandment. God now left them on their own to do **the work**. Sin penalized not only Adam and Eve, but their children as well. Sin entered the world, so God departed. Now you need to understand God's conditions to save the world so everyone could eventually re-enter God's rest!

The Priesthood

God told His **chosen people**, Israel, they were to be a **royal nation** and a **chosen Priesthood** (Exodus 19:5-6). When Israel kept sinning, God turned to "**the church**" through Christ. The Apostle Peter said the same thing God told Israel. "**But ye are a cho-**

sen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light (I Peter 2:9). Then, referring to The Gentiles, Peter stated they were **the people** of God (I Peter 2:10).

With the coming of a **promised seed** through Adam and Eve's children, a line of righteous people must exist, testifying or witnessing God's **promise to restore God's rest or paradise** (Hebrews 4:9). They must be God's chosen people leading others ultimately to Christ, The True High Priest and The Savior of The World.

Purpose Of The Priesthood

Why did God ordain a Priesthood? Paul defined how The Priesthood was chosen. **“For every high priest taken from among men [human] is ordained [chosen] for men [humanity] in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins”** (Hebrews 5:1). When sin entered the world, God decreed a Priesthood to be His **witnesses** to remind humanity of their sins and be able to offer gifts as sacrifices so they could be forgiven. These gifts and sacrifices were actual works, so they would learn their lesson and try harder not to sin. When did The Priesthood originate? It originated when sin began with Adam and Eve.

That is why The High Priest of God met Abraham a long time before Moses or The Levitical Priesthood. This High Priest was after The Order of Melchizedek. This Priesthood was **one of righteousness and faith** and **“not of works”** (Hebrews 7:2). God chose this Priesthood by their **faith – faith without works**. Why? This was **the faith** that Adam and Eve lacked. They didn't believe or trust

God and sinned by eating the **wrong tree**. Please understand, The Priesthood existed long before Moses was born and really started with Adam and Eve when **sin entered the world**. Then, with the birth of Cain and Abel, a Priest had to be chosen because sinning began. God would only listen to His chosen people who had **faith** in Him. The others who sinned had to make sacrifices before God would hear them.

Since **the promised seed** was to come from Adam and Eve's children, a choice had to be made. With only two males, Cain and Abel, one had to become God's **called** and **chosen** Priest. Cain, being the firstborn, should have **inherited** the **right** of being the first High Priest chosen by God (Hebrews 5:1). However, two conditions were required by God, **faith** and **righteousness**. Cain and Abel understood *The Gospel* as their parents lived it and passed it on to all of their children (Hebrews 4:3). Remember, God finished all His work by **the seventh day of creation**. Always remember, The Kingdom of God was in existence when Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden.

All that was necessary for the genealogy of **the promised seed** was for Cain and Abel to reach the age of accountability. That is why in *God's Story* you pick up the time-sequence when Cain and Abel are grown men. One is a farmer and the other a shepherd. Who will God choose as the forefather of Christ, the **promised seed**? Notice both Cain and Abel now work to survive. No longer did they have God's rest to eat fruit freely from any tree. They must, hereafter, do **the work** for their survival.

Both men, as the adults of the seed of Adam and Eve, came and thereafter offered God a gift. The question is which gift did God accept? Cain, being a farmer, offered the first fruits of his crops. Abel, as a shepherd, offered a lamb. Both seemed to be a logical

choice. Why did God pick Abel's sacrifice over Cain's? A lamb depicts Christ, as the true lamb of God, but Cain's offering was also an acceptable offering according to The Law (Deuteronomy 18:4). So both offerings, according to The Law, were acceptable to God. It had to be some other reason that God chose Abel's sacrifice over Cain's. The Priesthood, up to Abraham's time, was after The Order of Melchizedek. The Melchizedek Priesthood demanded **righteousness** (Hebrews 7:2). That is why Jesus was accepted and chosen above all His fellows as Melchizedek because He loved **righteousness** (Hebrews 1:9).

One condition to be God's Priest was to be "**righteousness.**" But God also imposed another requirement which ultimately made God pick Abel. God's **story**, *The Bible*, is clear. Paul reveals **the elders obtained a good report** of their righteousness, but how was this determined? God chose Abel's sacrifice as more excellent than Cain's because Abel had **faith** (Hebrews 11:1-4). There, clearly, is His answer in **God's Story**. Abel was a man of **faith** and **righteousness** which made His sacrifice more excellent than Cain's, and therefore, Abel was chosen to begin God's line of The Priesthood. He was God's **first** High Priest (Hebrews 5:1 and Hebrews 11:1-4). Was Abel really more **righteous** than Cain? How can you prove this conclusion in *The Bible*? You will find God knew the hearts of these two men. When God accepted Abel's sacrifice, Cain resented it. After all, this was from his hard work too. What did God say? God asked Cain why was he angry. Then God revealed that it is human nature to "lust" which constitutes sin or coveting (Colossians 3:5).

God said you must master sin. "**If you doest well, shalt thou not be accepted**" (Genesis 4:7)? God was calling Cain to repentance. What did Cain do? Did he repent? No! Instead he murdered his brother. So God knew Abel was definitely more "the **lover of**

righteousness” than Cain could ever be. God knew what choice to make because Abel had **faith** and **righteousness**. Abel was “**the first**” High Priest of God.

Abel's Faith

Why did God choose Abel's sacrifice as an act of faith? Both gave a sacrifice that was acceptable as explained in God's Law. Why was **Abel's sacrifice** and his faith accepted by God?

Abel's sacrifice was based upon **faith**, which made it a more excellent or a better sacrifice. Something about Abel's sacrifice made it more excellent. What was it? Hebrews states Abel's sacrifice was based upon **faith**. That **faith** made Abel's sacrifice more excellent. Why?

Faith has to do with **trust**. Obviously, Cain did not trust God when He selected Abel over Cain, who was the firstborn child of Adam and Eve. Rather than having **faith** in God for choosing Abel, Cain killed his brother. Being the first born he coveted The Priesthood. Cain did not have **trust** or **faith** in God. Abel did, so his sacrifice was accepted as righteousness by faith. Abel was more righteous because his heart was right. Both sacrifices were acceptable according to The Law. Abel would have been pleased with God's choice either way, because being more **faithful**, he would believe God knew what was best.

Cain proved he didn't believe God and murdered God's choice. Cain lacked a **faithful heart** and, instead, became a murderer.

CHAPTER 5

THE INHERITANCE

The line of “the promised seed” to restore paradise and The Tree of Life was all set. Abel was to be The High Priest to offer an acceptable sacrifice when sin had entered the world (Hebrews 5:1). Abel’s sacrifice was accepted because he demonstrated “faith” (Hebrews 11:1-4). Abel’s sacrifice was more excellent than Cain’s because Abel’s faith proved his “righteousness” to God.

Cain’s Heritage

Because Cain had killed Abel, God banned him from His presence. Cain no longer could be in God’s rest (Eden). Cain felt his punishment was greater than he could bear. God set a mark upon Cain so no one would kill him. But who would kill him?

Obviously, only others in the family would want to kill Cain. Only family would have a need to settle Cain’s murder of his brother. Where did this family come from?

Since Cain and Abel were grown men, Adam and Eve had other children, but only Cain was the firstborn, followed by Abel. It was the extended family members after Adam and Eve had more children who would have wanted to seek revenge for their brother’s death.

That is why Lamech, a great-great-great grandson of Cain’s said,

“If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold” (Genesis 4:24). Since Lamech killed two men who attacked him (while protecting himself), he felt he deserved more mercy than Cain. These were all **family** members, which became a family society.

Cain's Lineage

Cain married within his family and as time went on, began to build his own community which grew into a nation. But it was a nation without God. Cain passed on the knowledge of The Priesthood and as firstborn, he felt he had a right to The Office of a Priest.

It was at this time **Paganism** was born. Nations, which grew from Cain and his children, were spreading **religious ideas** as he understood and instituted them in his own way. These ideas not only came from his parents, but Cain included some of God's Law. The **good** and **bad** were religiously intermixed. The teachings of the pagan **king/priesthood** was carried to all future **pagan** generations but always excluding God. Pagans themselves lived partially in God's truth, but it was so mixed with human's imagination that it became a form of “unrighteousness.” Pagans lived **their “truth”** in “unrighteousness” as Cain did (Romans 1:18-21).

Aztecs, Egyptians, Babylonians, Sumerians, etc., all sacrificed animals (including humans) and had created their own “**priesthood.**” These Gentile Nations (without God) created Babylon or confusion. The world was left with pagan idolatry as opposed to the true Priesthood through the lineage of Abel. The **promised seed** would ultimately have to give the real sacrifice, the body God prepared for The Priesthood of Melchizedek or Jesus, The Christ. With Abel dead, how did the **promised seed** continue? Cain was cast out of Eden (pleasantness) to The Land of Nod or

“wandering without God.” Nod, in *The Bible*, is the wilderness where Satan is “the god” of this world (II Corinthians 4:4).

The Appointed One

After Abel’s death, Cain’s family began to grow into a nation of Gentiles, but without God. A new Priesthood had to be appointed which would replace Abel as God’s accepted Priesthood. This God revealed when Seth was born. Eve conceived and states, “**For God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew**” (Genesis 4:25).

Cain was still Eve’s firstborn, who was still alive, so why did Eve regard Seth as a replacement for Abel? Seth replaced Eve’s son, Abel as God’s High Priest. Seth was God’s accepted High Priest to offer sacrifices for sins. What follows?

As time went on, Seth has a son, Enos, whose own sons also began to call upon **the name** of God, The True God. Seth, as God’s High Priest, through whom **the promised seed would** come, was proclaiming *The Gospel*, of the coming **paradise** to be restored, which is God’s **kingdom**. **Thus, a society of paganism came through Cain while Seth’s lineage lived as The Sons of God.**

Those chosen for this Priesthood were accepted because of their **faith and not “works.”** Why? Notice this is exactly what Adam and Eve lacked. They lacked **faith** in God and sinned by eating of the wrong tree. That is what Christianity, the **faith** of The Fathers, is all about (Jude).

The Priesthood existed long before Moses and really started when sin entered the world with Adam and Eve. Now, with the birth of Cain and Abel, a Priest had to be chosen because sin began to

evolve and God would only hear from a **chosen people** who after sinning could repent, make a sacrifice and renew their faith in God. They could begin again with a clean slate.

Since the **promised seed** had to come from Adam and Eve's children, a choice had to be made. With only two grown males, Cain and Abel, one had to become God's **called** and **chosen** Priest. Cain, being the firstborn, should have inherited the right of being the first High Priest chosen among men by God (Hebrews 11:4). Remember, two conditions were required by God. First, a Priest must have "faith" and secondly, was to have a desire for "righteousness." That is required according to The Order of Melchizedek. Both Cain and Abel understood *The Gospel* as their parents passed it on to them (Hebrews 4:3). Remember, **God finished all His work by the seventh day of creation.**

The Kingdom of God existed when Adam and Eve lived in The Garden of Eden. All that was necessary for the line or genealogy of the **promised seed** was for Cain and Abel to reach the age of accountability. This is why in God's "**story**," you pick up the time sequence when Cain and Abel are grown men. One is a farmer and the other a shepherd. **God chose Abel.** No longer does God do "**the work**," which now meant Adam and Eve, as well as their progeny, were to make the choice of "**right**" and "**wrong**" by their own decisions.

The elders obtained a **good report** of their **righteousness**. But by what? If you read Hebrews 11:1-4, you find God chose Abel's sacrifice as a more excellent one than Cain's because Abel had **faith**. God clearly reveals His answer in *God's Story*. Abel was a man of **faith** and **righteousness**. This alone made Abel's sacrifice more excellent than Cain's and therefore, Abel was chosen to begin the line of God's Priesthood. Abel was God's first High Priest

according to Hebrews 5:1.

Was Abel really more righteous than Cain? How does *The Bible* prove it to you? Only God understands the hearts of all men and in particular, these two men. What actually happened when God accepted Abel's sacrifice over Cain's? Cain began to resent it. After all, this was Cain's hard work, too. What did God expect? God asked Cain why he was so angry. Then God revealed that it is **human nature** to lust, but at the same time, it is a sin or an act of coveting (Colossians 3:5). However, God told him he must master sin. If he did well, he would be accepted (Genesis 4:7). God was calling Cain to repentance.

What did Cain do? Did he repent? No, he murdered his brother. Abel was definitely **the lover of righteousness**. God knew what choice to make because Abel had **faith** and **righteousness**. Abel was the first High Priest of God. Hebrews 1 defines the two conditions necessary to be High Priest after The **Order of Melchizedek**.

After Abel's death, Seth became The High Priest. Both Cain and Abel had produced their own way of life, "**religiously speaking**," up to the time of the flood. The world was now divided, Seth's family following The True God, as The Sons of God. Cain and his family were building a family of pagan religious beliefs, seldom including The True God in the equation. The Pagans believed since God's "**spirit**," The Great Spirit, created everything, they decided to worship God's creation instead of God (Romans 1).

Cain claimed The Priesthood by "**right of firstborn**," passing down his lineage and his right of "inheritance." The nations of the world following Cain's heritage had their own Priest/Kings offering sacrifice to appease their personal ideas of a "god." Be-

fore the flood, idolatry prevailed throughout the world and all its religions.

The **inheritance** of The Priesthood was **man-made** and not of God. The pagan priesthood was also passed on or inherited by the right of the firstborn, which determined the inheritance.

Melchizedek Priesthood

The Priesthood of The Order of Melchizedek was by oath from Almighty God and not by human genealogy (Hebrews 7:20-22). This Melchizedek Priesthood had no father or mother but was by an oath chosen by God, Himself (Hebrews 7:1-3).

God chose The Order of Melchizedek by “**righteousness**” and “**faith**” and not from The Law of Inheritance through genealogy. The Melchizedek Priesthood came from God, Himself, to fulfill **the promised seed**.

This line or Order of Priesthood was not by man's inheritance but purely by God's choice, which culminated in Jesus, The Christ. Christ was The Anointed One as “**the body**” God wanted as an accepted sacrifice. Christ, The True High Priest of Melchizedek, replaced Cain (Pagan Priesthood) and Abel's Priesthood. How? By being both, Christ, the real firstborn, Son of God and by loving “righteousness.” That is why (Psalm 110 and Hebrews 1) Jesus replaced all firstborn as Priests, to **save the world**, which included both Pagans and Christians (I John 4:14).

Christ died for everyone's sins and was The Light for all men (John 1). However, The Levitical Priesthood remains on earth and Melchizedek is “**a spiritual priesthood**” in heaven (Hebrews 8:4).

The True Inheritance

Since The Priesthood of Melchizedek was not always selected by **the right of inheritance**, God came full circle. Christ, as High Priest, being God's firstborn Son **who was a lover of righteousness and faith was the body God accepted as High Priest. There was never a human who demonstrated righteousness and faith more than Christ did. Jesus truly became The Author of Salvation** (Hebrews 5:9).

This is why Jesus was "**the body**" that was accepted by God. God never was pleased with animal sacrifice (Hebrews 10:5). God allowed animal sacrifice from the time of Abel because **the true promised seed**, Christ, as God's **sacrifice** had not yet come. The Old Testament Priesthood was only a **shadow** or **type** of Christ (Hebrews 10). God accepted animal sacrifice because it was a shadow or type of the way human nature was. Jesus, as a human, was "**the acceptable lamb**," as God's sacrifice for all sins. The others were as goats or oxen – still carnal. Pagans, even worse, were lions, leopards and bears, voracious in behavior. Abel, and then Seth had "**the faith**" which was counted as **righteousness** for The Order of Melchizedek.

Once Jesus was resurrected and became just like God and was The True High Priest, He no longer was pictured as "a lamb," but totally "**spirit**" exactly like His Father (Hebrews 1:1-2).

To understand animal sacrifice completely, read the book *Discovering God*. The sacrifice of Christ, His firstborn Son, who loved righteousness and was faithful as Melchizedek was based upon the real body God wanted as a sacrifice (Hebrews 1:9 and John 1:18). As God's High Priest, who was perfect in **righteousness** and **faith**, Jesus now with His sacrifice has paid for all the world's

sins. Why? Why would Jesus' sacrifice, pay for everyone's sins? Christ, who as **The Word**, created all things and because he did, God made Him, The Heir of **all things** (Hebrews 1:1-4). Jesus, The Christ (Anointed High Priest) paid for everyone's sins because He created **everything**. It was, then, **salvation** became a matter of **inheritance**. This inheritance, since Jesus was the total **heir**, is the one who gives of His **inheritance** to everyone else. Salvation, therefore, comes from the spilled blood of Christ, The Savior. Why?

Life Is In The Blood

Moses said "**the life of human beings is in the blood**" (Leviticus 17:11). That is the reason blood has to be offered to make a sacrifice acceptable to God. By offering the very life of a person is what proves **faith** in God. Jesus, the **faithful** and **righteous one** gave His blood for you and everyone else. Why is giving one's life, the ultimate sacrifice which is acceptable by God? "**Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends**" (John 15:13). This human sacrifice, by spilling His blood for you, made Jesus, The Author of Your Salvation and The Groom to marry The Bride. (Matthew 22). He was willing to die because He loved you and all mankind more than His own life. Just as Adam died for his wife. He and God are "**love.**" That is the reason you must also be willing to sacrifice your life as a Christian. It is God's "**love**" (agàpè) that makes you Holy, as God is Holy (Ephesians 1:4). By being like Christ or having Christ "in you," you also inherit all things from Jesus, as Sons of God. Inheritance is the key to **salvation**. Once you become a living sacrifice like Jesus, as a lamb, you now become acceptable to God as His son (Galatians 3:28 and Romans 12:1). Everyone becomes Sons (the family) of God, like Christ through and by His **inheritance**.

CHAPTER 6

GOD'S TESTAMENT

God's "story" is God's written "legal will" or "testament." As with any "will" it must stand up in court. Those who contest the "will" have to be very sure of their case or they will be proven a fraud. If anyone is found to be "a fraud" they will be without excuse. The benefactors who are listed to receive an inheritance must also qualify for it to be legal. The executor or administrator is the one responsible to carry out the legality of "the will" and disperse all assets listed. A "will" must also, when written, have two to three witnesses to certify the legal document to be true.

The Executor

The Bible claims God, The Father, whose "testament" is His **story**, wants to give this inheritance to His sons and daughters. *The Bible* is GOD'S WRITTEN WILL in a **court of law** (The White Throne Judgment) to be testified or witnessed in **COURT**.

Ephesians 1:10 claims, "**In the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one [be the same] all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him.**" Jesus, The Christ is the administrator or mediator of the "will" (Hebrews 8:6).

It is God's purpose to allot **His household** as it gives Him great

pleasure to do so (Ephesians 2:9). God receives joy **“in giving”** because He is full of love. God loves His creation (Romans 8:19). He intends to make everything, all His creation to be **“very good”** just as it was on **the seventh day** in **The Garden of Eden** (Genesis 1:31). The result was **“God’s rest”** after **perfecting His work**. Jesus is the one given the job of restoring **God’s rest** (Matthew 18:11). When **paradise** was lost, Christ was assigned to restore it (1 Corinthians 15:22-23). By restoring it, The Tree of Life or Salvation which was lost will be reinstated.

The Dispensation

The **“fullness of times”** is when this **contract, The Covenant of God**, is fulfilled or completed. Then God’s **“will”** goes into force. When does this happen?

First you must understand when the **“will”** is executed and what benefits are dispersed to those receiving **the inheritance**. Christ said, **“For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth, whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son”** (John 5:21-22). Quite clear. The Son, Jesus, executes **“the will”** as a **judge**, and no one else will have that authority. What benefit does The Son give? **Eternal life** is what God bequeaths. It is a gift of **grace** as an **inheritance**. You cannot earn it but there is much, much more!

The Greek word for **“dispensation”** is defined as a **“household.”** **“A household consists of everything one owns.”** A **“dispensation”** is **“the result of dispensing the assets of the household.”** This is in addition to **“the gift of eternal life.”** God desires to give you everything He has. It gives Him pleasure and great joy. God loves His **creation**. The **dispensation** of God’s **house**, be-

sides **salvation** as a **gift**, is everything God **creates**. Realize the wonder and awesome **love** of God.

On the seventh day of creation, God said everything He created was **very good** (Genesis 1:31). Always remember God did the **work** and not Adam and Eve. This was God's **gift** to Adam and Eve and their future children. But there was a condition, which is the same requirement for **salvation**.

A Kingdom

When God created Adam and Eve, He gave them a job. “**And God blessed them and God said unto them, Be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowls of the air and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth**” (Genesis 1:28). Do you really understand what God is telling you? God told Adam and Eve they were given everything on earth so they could be the rulers and be in control as His heirs. What a gift! Humans will rule in God's **kingdom**. However, they had to replenish and take care of it. In essence, God told Adam and Eve they are responsible to care for all His **creation**. That is why He told them to dress and keep **the garden** (Genesis 2:15). This is exactly the same **condition for you to have salvation** and all of God's blessings (Deuteronomy 6:4-7 and Matthew 22:37-40). God's **conditions** for you to inherit from His “**will**” are to love God and love His creation. It is that simple! Humans make religion too complicated and confusing. What is required to be saved is to love God, as He loves you and love what God has given you. That is it!

God refers to “human religions” as Babylon, which consists of controversy and **confusion**. They are in “**the wilderness**” with

Satan as their **god** and **father** (John 8 and II Corinthians 4:4). That is why Jesus commands Christians to come out of her – Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

A Mystery

God's "**testament**" is like any "**will**" – it is kept a secret until it is executed. Then God will make **all things known**. Paul said, "**Having made known unto us [Christians] the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself**" (Ephesians 1:9).

Just like any "**will**" the one giving the inheritance keeps the contents secret until the contract is one day enacted. Why? Because a "**will**" has conditions. Any "**will**" can be changed when some of the conditions change. In *The Torah* itself, which is The Law, God had made changes with five different **covenants** in it. So God changed His "**will**" over five times in The Law or Torah.

Ultimately, God is giving **salvation** as a "**gift**" to everyone (I Corinthians 15:22-23 and I John 4:14). But God's "**will**" **covers much more than salvation**. God desires for you to share everything that He creates. But this is "**conditional**," with "**a reward**" for doing certain requirements, which are all based upon **faith** (Matthew 25:29). **Rewards** are in addition to **salvation**. Rewards in the "**will**" (*The Bible*) can be given or taken away. Since this is so, the mystery of God's "**will**" is to remain secret. Disclosure of God's "**testament**" must remain hidden and only known to God and His Son, Jesus, but also, includes the **witnesses**.

A Witness

Paul defined clearly the need for witnesses. "**In the mouth of two**

or three witnesses shall every word be established" (II Corinthians 13:1). Even God's promise given to Abraham was confirmed by an oath, by two immutable things (Hebrews 6:17-18).

The truthfulness and authenticity of an individual's word is guaranteed by two or three faithful witnesses. "Hearsay" does not have a chance in God's **court**. God requires His testament to be verified by two or three faithful witnesses! That is why **faith** is the basis of **salvation**. Without being **faithful**, a person's word cannot be reliable. It is by **faith** you are **saved** but that **faith** must be real and proven by "deeds" and "**works**" (James 2:18). Read the book *Faith With Works*.

God demands a **faithful witness** or Christ cannot accept the **witness in the judgment**. God's **witnesses "in the judgment"** must be clothed in white, which is **righteousness** or they will not be accepted (Revelation 19:8). God's witnesses are never to be fraudulent in any of their ways.

Jesus, The Christ is **the first faithful witness** who was sent by God to testify of His "**word**" (Revelation 1:5). But, you need two more witnesses.

The Twelve Tribes of Israel were a chosen nation to witness what God's "**will**" states to be true. However, they were rejected because they lacked **faith** (Hebrews 3:10-12). They did not understand God's ways. This is the reason, in **the millennium**, Israel will be a **faithful witness** to the world and will eventually be **saved** (Romans 11:16).

The third witness of God's "**will**" is The Church of God. That is why Jesus commissioned **the church** to be a witness of Him in all the earth (Acts 1:8). Now there are the three witnesses of

God's "testament." Christianity has an important commission. How faithful you are will validate your **testimony** or your **witness** during The White Throne Judgment.

That is why God's **faithful witnesses** will become **kings** and **priests**. Israel, as well, was to have been a nation of **priests** and **kings** (Exodus 19:6).

The Apostle Paul summarizes all the faithful witnesses of the past and clearly states, "**Wherefore seeing we [Christians] also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us** (Hebrews 12:1).

The Bible, God's "**story**" is truly God's "testament" or "**will**" to be administered by Jesus as The Christ, as **the promised seed**, to save Adam and Eve and all their children (I Corinthians 15:22-23). God's "**story**" is a legal document, written by God as His "**will**" to all His **creation** to be disclosed during The White Throne Judgment (John 5:27-29).

Enforcing God's Will

Hebrews 9:15-28 reveals the **biblical** requirements for God's **testament** to go into force. The key conditions are as follow:

- 1 **All sin must be forgiven and then destroyed.**
- 2 **Death of a testator or heir is, also, in charge of the estate.**
- 3 **Until the testator dies, "the will" cannot be executed.**

- 4 Blood had to be shed to reveal the love of the administrator. Christ is that **administrator**. One must be **faithful**.

- 5 **Finally, all those who are faithful and trust Christ will receive eternal life at His appearing.**

Until these conditions are met, the mystery of God's **testament** will not be made known. Only Jesus as The Mediator and His **faithful witnesses** will know the contents of God's "**will**" (Hebrews 8:6). Why not? Simply because God changes His "**will**" according to those who follow "**righteousness**" in **faith**.

CHAPTER 7

THE LAW

For nearly two thousand, five hundred (2,500) years there was no written Word of God. Didn't God preach *The Gospel* in those previous years? Was there no salvation before The Bible? Yes! The Gospel was preached from the very time of Adam and Eve in The Garden. Who, then, preached *The Gospel* before God had *The Bible* written down? Adam and Eve were living *The Gospel* in The Garden.

The Prophets

Paul plainly stated that in past years God spoke to the fathers, from Adam and Eve to this day by The Prophets. But initially God, Himself, revealed **the kingdom** to Adam and Eve (Hebrews 1:1-2). They lived in God's **kingdom**. The Hebrew word for "prophet" gives a much clearer definition of a "prophet" as opposed to the modern conception.

A "prophet" is "one to whom God reveals His Word by revelation in visions or dreams." It is also true that God gave **visions** and **dreams** to those like Isaiah, Ezekiel and others. Agabus was ONE example in The New Testament. In Hebrew, however, the word "prophet" has a broader definition. A "prophet" more correctly means "**one who speaks The Word of God.**" The counterpart in Greek is "**the oracle of God.**" In Greek times, "**an oracle**" was "one who spoke The Word of God as a pagan."

The Hebrew and Greek languages both convey the same understanding. Those Greeks or Hebrews who had **visions** and **dreams** were Prophets who had The Word of God given to them **directly**. Oracles, however, were “**pagans**” speaking truth “**in unrighteousness.**”

The “**oracles**” themselves spoke a false word of God. In Greek there are two words, “*prophetaise*” and “*prophetaeo*” signifying **these two definitions** of a “prophet.”

At times, even **nations** are considered God's Prophets. In Psalm 105:15, God calls The Nation of Israel as one of His Prophets. These nations were to speak and live by every Word of God. They were to be God's **witnesses** of His “**Word.**” God spoke in one form or another long before the **written word** by all His Prophets (Hebrews 1:1-2).

The Torah

Moses, a Prophet of God (Deuteronomy 18:18), was directed by God to put God's “**Words**” in a book. It was called *The Book of “The Law”* and later was translated into English. However, “The Law” in English does not do it justice. In Hebrew, “The Torah” (**law** when translated into English) carries far more meaning than just “**a law.**”

“Torah” is a Hebrew word that comes from a root meaning “to shoot an arrow.” It conveys the thought of living within a straight path. It is **instruction** or learning from God. The Jewish religion relates to *The Torah* as **the path** or **the way**. It is more than a Law. *The Torah* is a **way or path** of life. It is the teachings of **what is written**. Much of The Law or **Torah** is **the history of the creation by God**. In fact, the legal requirements of The Let-

ter of The Law has to do with **The Nation of Israel** only. This part of The Torah of Law is known as **The Law of Moses**. Moses was the “**administrator**.” This Law only covered 120 years from Moses’ birth to his death. But for two thousand, four hundred years (2,400), *The Torah* had different covenants.

Five Covenants

Erroneously some consider The Law or Torah, as part of *The Old Testament* (God’s “**will**”) or *The Old Covenant* “**contract**.” But there are actually **five contracts** or **covenants** in The Torah and not merely The Ten Commandments. The Jews made **six hundred and thirteen commands** given by God, from The Torah. Read a copy of *The Talmud* for all **613 commandments**. There is much more to The Torah, known in English as The Law, than you may realize. The **five agreements** are as follows:

First Contract

God’s contract with Adam and Eve was they had a choice to eat from The Tree of Life or The Tree of Good and Evil (Genesis 2-4). This **agreement** with God actually had to do with **salvation** – **eternal life**. Adam and Eve, from the beginning, could have lived in God’s **kingdom** with God’s **presence** forever. This was God’s **rest** or God’s **household**.

Second Contract

After the flood, God made a **covenant** or **contract** with Noah. This became known as The Noahite Covenant. This **contract** had much to do with **the church’s agreement** in Acts 15, when it was decided The Gentiles, without “**the works**” of The Law, could receive God’s Holy Spirit. The Gentiles did not have to be cir-

cumcised or **keep any part** of The Letter of The Law (Acts 15:24-29). Gentiles followed The Noahite Covenant. Now The Gentiles followed God's Law on a higher standard, by God's Holy Spirit being able to change a person's human nature (Romans 2).

Third Contract

Many are not aware that Abraham had **two acts of faith** with two **different promises** by God. This **covenant** was a **contract of righteousness** as Abraham kept God's **commandments and statutes** (Genesis 26:5), but it was not a **legal requirement** because **the covenant** was based upon **faith**. Abraham based the obedience of God's Law on his **faith** rather than a **legal matter**. The Law of Moses was not added to The Torah for 430 years after Abraham's time (Galatians 3:17). That is when The Law became a legal requirement with judgments administered by Moses. That is why it is called The Law of Moses.

This is the reason, after two thousand, five hundred years (2,500), Moses started to write The Torah into a law – The Law of Moses. Now The Torah became a matter of a law in court (I Kings 8:32).

This first act of **faith** had a **promise** which only had to do with **the land promised** to Abraham's children. No **salvation** was offered, but it was still based upon **faith** and was **guaranteed**. This was an unconditional contract based totally upon **faith**. This is why Melchizedek, God's High Priest, blessed Abraham. Melchizedek was a Priesthood that loved **righteousness** and had **faith** as its **requirement**. There were no additional conditions to keep The Letter of The Law because The Law was meant to be written in the hearts and minds of men. This would be *The New Covenant* or New Testament administered by Christ. Read all of Genesis 15. This first agreement or The Abrahamic Promise only gave **the**

land as God's rest.

Fourth Contract

This **covenant** or **contract** was also a guarantee for **salvation**. It was a **promise** by God based upon **faith** for **eternal life** that God, not **The Letter of The Law**, would change a person's nature. Then The Law would be written in their hearts and minds. In **faith you believe** through Christ that God would make you perfect or Holy as He is perfect (Ephesians 1:4). Otherwise, you would **lack** that **faith**. Read all of Genesis 22 and the book *Faith With Works*.

Fifth Contract

The fifth covenant became a **legal document** and was only made with Israel. Very plainly, Moses stated the **contract** made with Israel was different than any of the **previous contracts** made with the fathers (Deuteronomy 5:2-3). This **covenant** is not based on **faith** but on The **Letter** of The (written) Law and must be kept strictly. Breaking even one little point of The Law made one **guilty** of breaking the **entire law** (James 2:10). Why was God so **strict** with Israel? In *The Book Of Deuteronomy*, in Hebrew, is a re-writing of The Law of Moses, after they sinned. That is why Deuteronomy 5 states this **covenant** is not the **same covenant** as with the Fathers. This **covenant** had blessings in this life but also curses with **no eternal life**. It was added to The Torah 430 years after Abraham (Galatians 4).

Hebrews 3 reveals Israel did not know God's **way** was based upon **faith**. Because Israel sinned by building **the golden calf**, God gave them **the legal letter** of The Law to be kept perfectly because they lacked the **faith** God intended them to have. Right and wrong had

to be spelled out for them because they had a **wrong heart** (Deuteronomy 5:29). The God of *The Old Testament* wasn't cruel; it was because Israel refused to have a right heart based upon **faith**, and therefore, by their own human effort, had to keep The Letter of The Law perfectly. This is known as "**Man's Work**." This Letter of The Law was administered by Moses, called The Law of Moses. The only way God could allow them to be His chosen people, as a **witness** of His **testament** or **will**, was for them to keep The Law "**perfectly**" as a **legal document**. This covenant had blessings and cursings or judgment. This Law of Moses was a court matter.

Because Israel lacked **faith**, even The Priesthood had to be changed from Melchizedek to Levi. This Priesthood was to be based upon a **carnal** or human commandment (Hebrews 7). This **covenant** was for **carnal, unrighteous people** (I Timothy 1:7-10). The reason Paul called this commandment "**carnal**" was The Law had to be kept by human effort. They had a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29).

Just as any nation having people who have **no conscience** to do **righteousness**, there must be **written legal laws** which must be kept to protect the innocent population. This fifth covenant in The Torah or Law was part of The Law known as *The Old Covenant* or *Old Testament*. This **covenant** was only part of **The Torah** or **the way** for unbelieving people who lacked **faith** in God. **The Torah** or The Law covers at least **five covenants**. The Law of Moses was only for Israel as a **witness** so they and others could eventually come to God (Hebrews 3:5 and Galatians 3:19, 24).

The Torah is much, much more than **the one covenant** made with Israel. *The Torah* also includes The Abrahamic Covenant based upon **faith** so God would change everyone's human nature by

writing His Law in their **hearts** and **minds** (Jeremiah 31:31). It is all a matter of faith and trust in God. That is **the theme** in God's "**story**." Now, hopefully, you are able to fully understand The Torah, which is known as The Law.

Perfection And Carnality

The Torah covers **the history of creation** with Adam and Eve until "**a nation**" could be chosen as God's people. Those groups eventually became known as The Nation of Israel.

The theme of the promised seed courses throughout these *first five books* written by Moses. It is a story starting with God's **kingdom in paradise** or God's **rest**, where Adam and Eve are living in perfection. The choice was theirs, but they sinned and were cut off from The Tree of Life – **salvation**.

Because of sin which Cain committed, two different groups of people generated their own societies. Paganism, without God, was pursued by Cain and his lineage, which established many personal **gods** alongside the **worship** of The One True God. Any human establishment always ends in confusion or Babylon. Seth, who replaced Abel and his lineage, called upon God and were God's sons. Seth was the lineage **to restore paradise** from which **the promised seed** would come.

Both societies, Cain's and Seth's, had High Priests and both offered their own chosen type of **sacrifices**. Each offered sacrifices to please their **individual gods**. Seth, calling upon **the true God**, sacrificed on behalf of his people for sins as **the faithful one**, as Abel did before him.

In time, the world was filled with many **gods**, especially since

each human lived almost one thousand years. Each had a favored “**god**” that they chose as their High Priest to intervene for their sins.

Near the time of the flood, societies had integrated the teachings of the **sons of God** along with the **pagans**. The world had literally become **perverse** and every thought mankind generated had turned to evil (Genesis 6:5). The world became evil because every human system of government ended in violence (Matthew 11:12).

One thousand years of existence, as in the case of Methuselah, did not keep mankind from turning to different levels of **evilness**. God had to step in before the complete destruction of every single person. Carnality dominated the human family. Humanity, by its own efforts, **could not ever** become perfect. To end the evil, God caused the flood and only Noah and his family were **saved**.

The free choice God gave to the inhabitants did not, nor could not, restore **paradise**. Even God's **chosen people**, in time, integrated and became part of Babylon. Only Noah, **a preacher of righteousness**, “who was perfect in his generation” and only his household were preserved.

About two thousand years of world history seems to show you that humans could not live at peace and everything seems to end in carnality. This **thread** throughout God's **story**, *The Bible*, will prevail until God's **kingdom** is restored by Christ, **the promised seed**. It goes without saying, humans, left to themselves, eventually become carnal in one way or another.

The word “**carnal**” in Hebrew and Greek merely means “*beast like*.” Mankind, just as animals, fight for their survival. Self-

preservation dominates humanity like any of the animal kingdom. That is why, starting with Abel, God accepted animal sacrifices. Notice what Solomon, in all his **wisdom**, learned: “**I said in mine heart concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they might see that they themselves are beasts**” (Ecclesiastes 3:18). Until **the promised seed** restores what was lost, mankind will always be carnal or act beast-like. Humanity, on their own, each and every time, resorts to or ends in violence and war. Any type of religion done by man’s efforts always ends in chaos and confusion.

God accepted animal sacrifices for the various sins because sacrifices were a **shadow** or a picture of good things to come (Hebrews 10:1). God never delighted or had pleasure in the sacrificing of animals (Hebrews 10:4-6).

The Apostle Peter clearly reveals **this truth** of God. Peter received a vision where God asks Peter to eat all kinds of animals, **clean** and **unclean**. Peter said he had never eaten any unclean animals and would not eat unclean foods. Peter pondered this vision until he was called to **the first conversion** of a Gentile, named Cornelius, who was a centurion. Peter had the vision where God told him, concerning all these animals, both clean and unclean, “**What God hath cleansed that call not thou common.**” Read what Peter finally learned in Acts 10 and Acts 11:9.

Then Peter understood the vision after he saw Cornelius receive God’s Holy Spirit – that God no longer discriminated between Gentiles and His people Israel. Peter said, “**But in every nation he that fears [believes] him [God] and worketh righteousness is accepted with him**” (Acts 10:34-35).

Solomon saw that mankind, in their **natural state**, were acting

carnally, just as **beasts** act. Only God can make domesticated humanity as clean animals, such as an ox, goat or sheep. These individuals are still carnal but trainable. God calls this **repentance** when you turn to **the true God**. So “**in small steps**” or “**in leaps**” you can become **righteous**. Hopefully, now you understand why God allowed and accepted animal sacrifice for sin.

It started with Cain and Abel and continued through the ages by pagans who were accepted as High Priests as well. The Egyptians, Sumerians and Aztecs, among others, worshipped their gods as each group decided for themselves. God's Prophets and High Priests made sacrifice for sin from the beginning with Abel. That is why God told Noah to bring both clean and unclean animals into **the ark** (Genesis 7:6-10).

Animal sacrifice did not start with Moses and Israel but from the beginning with Cain and Abel. Abel was the **accepted** High Priest of God. The other High Priests through Cain made their offering, not according to God's ways but instead chose their own ways (including the sacrifice of children).

God reveals **The Pagans** took the actual truth of God and turned the truth into **foulness** or unrighteousness (Romans 1:18).

The Torah is more than The Law given to Moses, it was **the shadow** of good things to come, which is the ultimate accepted High Priest, Melchizedek, Jesus, The Christ. The Torah, as a **schoolmaster**, was and is the **way** or **path** to Christ (Galatians 3:19).

But remember, God took no pleasure in animal sacrifice, but in the body (Christ) He was to prepare (Hebrews 10:5). The **entire Torah** points to Jesus, **the promised seed**. Be aware God can and does have certain individuals come to Christ who repent and

become Christians.

That is why The Law of Moses or The Torah administered by Moses only included **one covenant** in The Law or The Torah. The Law administered by Moses was only a **testimony** or **witness** of things to be spoken about The Christ (Hebrews 3:1-3). The Torah revealed Christ and Jesus said, very plainly, that this is the **theme** of God's **story**. Jesus revealed that if they had listened to Moses, they would have believed in Him because Moses himself, from the beginning, spoke of Jesus in his own writings (John 5:46-47).

The Torah is far more than a Law. It is a **path** to **eternal life** or **salvation**. The Torah covers *The Bible's* "**theme**" of the **promised seed**, Christ, who will restore **paradise** (Matthew 18:11).

The Old Covenant made with Israel is only **one contract** in The Torah. *The Old Testament* proclaims a right to live and prosper in the **promised land** but secured no guarantee for **eternal life**. This *Old Covenant* had only to do with the **land** and **prosperity**.

The Torah is about Christ, the **promised seed**, with **salvation**, or the right to The Tree of Life in **paradise**. That is why Jesus said, "**I am the resurrection and the life**" (John 11:25). Jesus, Himself is the **path** or The Torah. Moses and The Letter of The Law were only to be a **witness** to **testify** of Christ, The Messiah.

The Torah, the **first five books** of *The Bible*, were **written** as a **witness** to testify to the **theme** of God's **story**. The Torah, is a legal document, as you would find in court. Israel, as God's people, was to witness Christ by keeping The Law perfectly, in every point, but they failed, as no one can keep the Law perfectly. They will complete or **fulfill** this "**testimony**" or "**will**" of God to the world during **The Millennium** (Romans 11:25-26).

God waited about 2,500 years to write *The Bible*, God's "**will**" as a "**testimony**" of His plan. This "**will**" is to be a **contract** which will be exposed or made known at The White Throne Judgment. Until Moses and The Nation of Israel, God **witnessed** *The Gospel* through The Prophets who were **faithful** to the end (Hebrews 1:1-3).

When Israel sinned, it became necessary that God made The Law, *The Old Covenant*, a legal matter so Israel could remain God's **witness**.

Much of The Torah demands God's **witnesses** have free choice just as Adam and Eve had. Now Israel which are God's Prophet, because of their wrong hearts, must keep The Letter of The Law perfectly by their own **works** of **righteousness**. The keeping of The Law of Moses was their own righteousness by The Letter of The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25).

CHAPTER 8

THREE WITNESSES

From Adam and Eve in The Garden, to the times of Israel, you have traced the theme of God’s “story” about Christ, “The Promised Seed.”

With God’s “testament” or “will” being written as a legal document, His Prophets and Israel became the first witnesses of this testimony.

You will find that the rest of *The Old Testament* relates to Israel’s refusal to witness *The Gospel* with God’s constant efforts through His Prophets to make Israel faithful and learn to trust Him.

When calling *the scriptures* – *The Old Testament*, it can be a misnomer. You have seen many covenants made by God with mankind in The Law. That is why *The Old Testament* is merely called *the scriptures* by The Jews. In Hebrew, *the scriptures* refer to *The Old Testament* as The TANAK.

The three divisions of *The Old Testament* break down to T.N.K. “T” representing “The Torah,” “N” representing “The Neviim” or “prophets” and “K” representing “The Ketuvim” or “writings.” Then, with the added vowels, it is translated “TANAK.”

Amazingly, Jesus defines what these three parts of *the scriptures* refer to or why God had them written. Remember, Jesus is **the promised seed** who restores paradise, God’s rest, to Adam and Eve’s children (I Corinthians 15:22-23).

The Tanak's Purpose

For forty days Jesus taught His Disciples about God's **kingdom**, then He was taken to heaven. Notice what He said just before He left: "**These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law [Torah] of Moses, and in the prophets [Neviim] and in the Psalms [Ketuvim] concerning me**" (Luke 24:44).

The **entire TANAK** was written about Christ. When you study *The Old Testament*, you will find throughout **the theme** of God's "**story**" it is about Christ as The Administrator who will restore **paradise**. *The Old Testament* can't be said any simpler. The entire *TANAK* is about Christ and **the restoration** to The Garden of Eden with The Tree of Life. Jesus claims His Disciples are to be **witnesses** of those things which reveal Him in The *TANAK* (Luke 24:48). **The Torah** and all The **Prophets** and **Writings** witness Christ. There are three written **witnesses** about Christ.

Israel – God's Prophets

Besides God's Prophets, The Nation of Israel was also to be God's Prophets (Psalm 105:15). Read the entire 105th Psalm and get Israel's **promise of the land** by being God's Prophet. But who was Israel? Jacob was renamed Israel, who eventually had 12 sons known as the Twelve Tribes of Israel. Read Galatians 4 where Isaac was miraculously born to Sarah who was past her reproductive years. Isaac was born of God by a promise. That is why Israel was chosen as God's people and witness (Genesis 22).

These twelve sons grew into The Nation of Israel. The twelve sons, as a nation at the time of Moses, became a nation of millions. When Moses died he was replaced by Joshua, who brought

them into **the promised land**. As long as Joshua or the elders remained, Israel followed God. After the death of Joshua and the elders, Israel segmented into self-rule, each tribe of the twelve, in their **separate inheritance** by lot. Some even began to hire their own Levites as their own personal Priests. It was a time when each person did what was **right** in his own eyes (Judges 21:25).

Because The Israelites were not following God, their enemies, such as The Philistines, prevailed over them. Each person was deciding **right** from **wrong** and not including God in their decisions, which eventually brought persecution from their enemies. They cried out to God, so God sent them a judge, Samson, who would deliver them. The **judges** and Israel were never unified except for short periods of time. Read *The Book of Judges*. Israel never fully entered God's **rest** (Hebrews 4:8).

Israel would turn to God and then when things got better, they began to forget Him. "*Jesus*," translated in Hebrews 4:8, should be "*Yeshua*," and is an English **miss translation**. In Hebrew it is translated correctly as "Yeshua."

Then the people wanted a king. God said since Israel did not want God as their ruler, He gave Saul as their first king. Then Saul disobeyed God and was replaced by King David.

David, being a king after God's heart, had united Israel; and Israel **almost** entered God's **rest** (Hebrews 4:7). God promised David that a son of His would always be available to sit on **the throne as king**. David's kingdom reached its height with his son, Solomon, but finally dissipated because of David's and Solomon's many wives and concubines. Read II Samuel.

From this point of "**almost entering** God's rest" in **the promised**

land, Israel deteriorated into two nations known as The Nation of Israel and The Nation of Judah. Rehoboam, Solomon's son, was a harsh ruler and a raiser of taxes. Israel decided to separate The Ten Tribes from Judah (Jews) and they became known as The Nation of Israel. From that time on, King David's sons, starting with Rehoboam, only ruled Judah while Jeroboam reigned over The Ten Tribes of Israel.

The theme of **the promised seed**, from Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Israel as a nation, to Israel's division from Judah, now left Judah with the scepter of kingship until Shiloh or Christ would come. Jacob, who became Israel, made this prophecy just before his death in Genesis 49:10. The Law was also to be administered from this time by Judah until Jesus came (Genesis 49:10). The theme of God's **story** continues with Christ, **the promised seed**.

The ten remaining tribes, now known as Israel, only had **the promise** of wealth and prosperity through Jacob's son, Joseph. Joseph had two children, Ephraim and Manasseh. Ephraim became the head tribe of The Ten Tribes of Israel in prophecy (Genesis 49:22-26).

These two kingdoms, Israel (ten tribes) and Judah (two and one-half tribes), remained in **the promised land** until they were **morally corrupt**. Kings of Israel and Judah were a combination of both bad and good.

Israel, as The Ten Tribes, with their capital in Samaria and Judah with its capital in Jerusalem, ended up going into captivity. First, Israel was taken captive by Assyria and then 130 years later, Judah was taken captive by King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon. Read Kings and Chronicles. **The promised land** was lost because The Twelve Tribes of Israel refused to be **witnesses** of **The Gospel**

to the world. Likewise, Judah followed Israel **into** captivity for seventy years.

As recorded in The *TANAK*, the **three written witnesses** – *The Torah*, The Prophets and **The Writings** – were fulfilled. They were waiting for The Messiah, **the promised seed**, to save them from captivity and restore that **promised land** to both Israel and Judah.

Chapter 9

THE FOUR GENTILE KINGDOMS

The Ten Tribes of Israel were lost in captivity. They were to be scattered in all nations. Wherever those lost tribes predominated, they had the physical blessings of the earth. Remember, this was prophesied by Jacob in Genesis 49. These were the blessings bestowed upon Jacob's son, Joseph.

Genesis 49 also predicted Judah would remain The Law “**giver**” as well as “**keeper**” of The Scepter of Kingship until Shiloh, The Christ, **the promised seed**, came. The Bible “story” **theme** continues.

Captivity

With both Israel and Judah in captivity, it is Judah who carries the promise of David's **seed** to always have an heir for the throne. The Messianic Promise continues from this time on, even through the captivity. God promised His people they would enter God's **rest** or **paradise** through Christ, The Messiah (Hebrews 4:9). With the chosen people of God in captivity, The Gentile Kingdoms took control of the known world, especially those nations around The Mediterranean Sea. This is the reason the prophecy of the kingdoms (as beasts) coming out of The Mediterranean Sea refers to each kingdom.

“Prophecy” is “history in advance.” In Ephesians 1:5 God prede-

terminated or prophesied His purpose.

“World rule” shifts from **the chosen people** in The Promised Land to The Gentiles, until all **the purposes in God's plan** are fulfilled and completed.

Paul stated that Israel, as a nation, is to remain in darkness until The Time of The Gentiles is **fulfilled** or completed (Romans 11:25). Israel combined, Judah and Israel, will not be in God's **rest** until Christ comes and restores The Davidic Kingdom during **the millennium**. During this one-thousand-year Davidic reign, Christ will save Israel to be God's witness to The Gentile World. Up to this moment, The Gentile Nations have reigned in the world to fulfill God's plan. As long as the kings, who rule The Gentile Kingdom, know they reign, not by their power, but by God's power, they will keep their kingdoms. Now for some of the prophetic books about Judah's captivity. Israel is lost to the world while Judah continues The Abrahamic Covenant of **the promised seed**.

Daniel

King Nebuchadnezzar took Judah into captivity and used many of The Jewish **leaders** who were intelligent and wise in his court. One of these brilliant captives was Daniel. The name “Daniel” means “God's judge.”

Nebuchadnezzar had a dream that disturbed him greatly. None of his sorcerers could interpret the dream. Eventually Daniel told the king that God is the only one who can interpret dreams accurately.

Daniel reveals the dream as a great **human image**. Read all of

Daniel 2. The head is made of **gold**. The arms and breast are of **silver**. The stomach and thighs of **brass**. The legs and ten toes are a mixture of **iron and clay**. Daniel interprets that in the days of the legs and toes, **the promised seed**, The Messiah, will come and break the legs and toes, until the entire image crumbles and is totally destroyed.

This is **the end** of The Times of The Gentiles. This great image represents The Gentile's rule until Jesus, The Christ **returns** and establishes God's **kingdom**, during **the millennium**. You will learn this was to occur at Christ's first coming.

This completes Satan's rule as the **god of this world** (II Corinthians 4:4). Paul also declares Satan's world ends with these four Gentile Kingdoms. This completes The Times of The Gentiles with The Return of Christ as King of Kings. God's **rest** is restored. Israel believes The Messiah and becomes God's **witness** of His "**testament**" to the world. The wilderness ruled by Satan is **over**. Satan is imprisoned during **the millennium** so the world cannot be deceived (Revelation 20:2).

Daniel then interprets "**the image**." He reveals that Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, is **the head of gold**. The next kingdom is Media-Persia, which is followed by The Greco-Macedonian Empire under Alexander, The Great, and the final kingdom is The Roman Empire. At the conclusion of The Roman Empire, Jesus, The Christ comes to establish God's **rest** and **kingdom**. Read Daniel 7. As you study, you will see this prophecy could have occurred at Christ's first coming.

This is world history in prophecy from about 527 B.C. till Jesus **returns**. *The Old Testament* "**focus**" is now upon Judah, The Jews, as they are responsible for The Law and **the scepter kingdom**.

Cyrus, The Mede

About seventy years after Judah was taken captive, God heard the pleas of The Jews. Cyrus, The King of Media-Persia, had become the ruler of the second kingdom prophesied in Nebuchadnezzar's great image. This kingdom under Cyrus was of silver and still considered a precious metal. Why? Cyrus, as prophesied, issued a decree to have Jews return to Palestine, specifically to Jerusalem, to restore **the temple**.

This was done under Ezra and Nehemiah. Read those two books over again. The Jews had much difficulty, especially with The Chaldeans from Babylon who had been placed there in Nebuchadnezzar's time with Samaria becoming their main area. **The temple** needed to be restored especially in reference to the coming of Christ, The Promised Seed.

The second temple was completed by Herod, The Great, after over forty years of building. This **second temple**, completed by Herod, was very important to **the theme** of *The Bible* – God's "**will**." God was ready to make a significant change in *The Old Covenant* made with Israel under Moses, known as The Law of Moses. Not only was **the covenant** or "**will**" changed but also as to how The Law of God was to be kept or administered (Hebrews 7:12).

The Last Days

Many believe that the **last days** refers to **the end of days** when Jesus is to return and establish God's **kingdom**. Even though The Apostles said they were in the **last days**, many believe they made a **biblical** mistake because they expected Christ to return, at any minute. In actuality, they did not expect Him. In fact, Peter be-

lieved it could be thousands of years away (II Peter 3:8-9).

Paul clearly reveals “**the last days.**” “**God who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in times past unto the fathers by the prophets** [from Adam and Eve on]. **Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds**” (Hebrews 1:1-2).

When did **the last days** start? They started when Jesus was born, when He came in the flesh. Christ came to establish peace and **end** The Time of The Gentile’s “**rule.**” Always remember, this prophecy could have happened when Jesus first came. *The New Testament* means just what it says. Christ came to administer *The New Covenant*. This was a change of God’s “**will,**” which God’s “**word**” promised in Jeremiah 31:31. However, when did God mean for His “**will**” or “**covenant**” to be changed? At the time of the **last** or fourth beast of Daniel’s prophecy of the great image, The Roman Empire was initiated at Christ’s birth.

Julius Caesar, about 65-67 B.C., started **the empire as the beast** who was wounded and finally resurrected. (Read *Revelation Uncovered*).

The promised seed, The Christ, would destroy the last ruling Roman Empire image, which had become more diverse than the other three. Both Christ and Rome existed at the same time. Both had to exist for Christ to be able to destroy it. This truly was the **last days** as Paul stated.

The introduction of *The New Covenant* demanded a body be sacrificed so *The New Covenant* could be **written**. Blood must be spilled before a **covenant** can be in force (Hebrews 10:5, 8-15). Christ had to come as **the administrator** to rewrite **the testament**

or God's "**will**." God's "**will**" was the same but a new contract of "**conditions**" was to be introduced. This new covenant was the same one as Adam and Eve had, at liberty to choose, or have free choice.

As mediator between God and mankind, Jesus was mankind's lawyer rewriting *The New Covenant*. That is why Paul said that in these **last days** God was changing His "**will**" having Christ, **the administrator** as your **mediator**. It was time for a *New Covenant*. Paul stated that The Priesthood would also be changed when The Law was changed (Hebrews 7:12).

Israel, as God's witness, had failed in their commission. Moses had been faithful as **the administrator** in His house (Hebrews 3:1-3). Remember, The Nation of Israel was not **faithful**, so they had to be replaced by Christ.

Paul stated that both Jesus and Moses were **faithful witnesses** in their **houses**. Both were and are God's **houses** or households (Hebrews 3:2). The difference between Moses' house and Israel's was that Moses was only to testify or witness what was to come, which was a **better "testimony" (will)**. However, the **house** Jesus is building, can make His **witnesses perfect**. This new **witness** was and is to become Holy, like God and have God's Law written in their **hearts**. This was better than just doing The Letter of The Law, which was weak and could not make them perfect. God's "**will**" demands one to be "**holy**" in order to inherit God's **promise** (Ephesians 1:1-3). That is why in these **last days**, the time of *The New Covenant* or God's "**new will**" – Christ, The Administrator, spoke God's "**word**." That is why God's "**work**" is "**that ye believe on Him whom he [God] had sent**" (John 6:28-29).

Christ came as a human in the **last days** (during the fourth beast)

to confirm this “**new will**” which God was instituting. That is why Christ came into the world to **save it** and restore what was **lost** (Matthew 18:11 and I John 4:14).

This “**new will**” or covenant had to be written so the fourth beast, The Roman Empire, could be destroyed by Christ, **the promised seed**. The Time of The Gentiles could have been fulfilled if The Jews accepted Christ, but instead they rejected Him (John 1:10-11).

CHAPTER 10

FOUR HUNDRED YEARS

It had been four hundred years since Judah had heard a Prophet. The last book of *The TANAK*, which is *The Book of Malachi*, was God's last Prophet describing the horrible moral condition of Judah. *The Bible* "order" is different in Jewish translations but *The Book of Malachi* is still the last Prophet.

Moral Decay

After The Jews were restored to Palestine following their seventy years of captivity, the lessons in Babylon did not improve their behavior. With all of God's merciful pleadings by all His Prophets, you find even The Priesthood, itself, had corrupted themselves. Malachi cries out in God's name: "**A son honours *his* father and a servant his master: if then I *be* a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name? Ye offer polluted bread upon mine altar; and ye say ... The table of the Lord is contemptible. If ye offer the blind for sacrifice, is it not evil? and if ye offer the lame and sick, is it not evil? offer it now unto thy governor; will he be pleased with thee, or accept thy person? saith the Lord of hosts. And now, I pray you, beseech God that he will be gracious unto us: this hath been by your means: will he regard your persons? saith the Lord of hosts"** (Malachi 1:6-9).

Just before **the promised seed** would come to heal and restore everything which was lost, Malachi made it painfully clear Judah and The Priesthood had rejected God. **“Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea they that tempt God are even delivered”** (Malachi 3:14-15). Christ told the religious leaders – The Pharisees, **“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within [hearts] full of dead men’s bones and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity”** (Matthew 23:27-28).

The Jews, with all their pleadings to be **saved**, pledged to obey God, but eventually fell in the usual moral decay after God had helped them. As always with mankind, when life becomes prosperous and good, God is **too easily forgotten**. From time immemorial – Adam to this present time, when the good times roll in, God is little by little forgotten. A people will appear to want God and do good, but God wants a **right heart** and not merely a **human form of religion**. So it was four hundred years before Christ was born as The Son of Man and **only the few remembered God**. Malachi said it well. **“Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name”** (Malachi 3:16).

Stage Is Set

God’s last Prophet was forecasting Judah’s future. **“Behold, I**

will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to His temple, even the messenger of the covenant [Abrahamic], whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts” (Malachi 3:1). Reread Malachi 3:1 again. There are **two messengers**. One messenger prepares the way for the **second messenger**. Who is the first messenger?

Malachi 4:5-6 reveals the first messenger is Elijah, The Prophet who comes preparing the **hearts** of the children to the fathers. The fathers are Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and so on. This Elijah, as you will see, calls for **repentance** in their hearts and not merely a religious chain of physical works. For **the promised seed** to come, God now wanted a change of heart or change of nature. Who was this Elijah?

You will prove Malachi was not the LAST PROPHET of God. Malachi, himself, prophesies who the next Prophet of God would be. Malachi 4:5-6 foretells the next Prophet of God to come is Elijah. So there it is! Malachi was not God’s last prophet. Elijah is “to come” as the last Prophet before Christ comes.

Jesus reveals Elijah was John, The Baptist and called for repentance of the heart. Read Matthew 11:11-15.

So, to those who will listen, Christ said, “**And from the days of John, the Baptist until now The Kingdom of Heaven suffereth [taken] violence, and the violent take it by force”** (Matthew 11:12).

Amazingly, all history to the time of John, The Baptist, God’s **kingdom** was taken by force. They always thought only military means would be the solution. Israel entered the **land** (which had

been promised) **by military force**. This is exactly the reason The Jews were looking for some **military** solution to be set free from the control of The Roman Empire (the last beast of Daniel 2). Their Messiah would ultimately destroy this last world Gentile Kingdom and **take over the rulership of the world**.

This Messiah, “Yeshua” or “Joshua” would deliver them from Rome. The entire movement of The **Zealots** “falsely” believed this. The Jews believe this very false solution to this day. Many Jews presently believe these present days will prove Yeshua and He will come and deliver them from their enemies. They are looking to Armageddon at Christ’s second coming. The “**unconverted**” have always believed in violence or a military success to enter God’s **kingdom**. That is why religion has caused so many wars. But never forget, “violence is not God’s way.”

The Lubavitches of today, a Jewish order, are looking for the resurrection of one of their late Rabbis, named Schneirson, who will be **the resurrected messiah**. It was the same in John, The Baptist’s time. The Jews were expecting The Messiah from The House of David to deliver them **militarily** or to take **the kingdom** by force. What did Jesus say? He said **the kingdom** under The Law suffered **violence** (literally, it was humans killing humans). The violent took **the promised land** by force. That is why Christ said **all The Prophets** prophesied God’s **kingdom** would be taken by force or violence. But now with John, The Baptist, a change was to transpire. Read Malachi 3:1 again.

This second messenger wasn’t coming to save The Jews “**militarily**,” but was to come to **the temple** to restore **righteousness**. Jesus, according to Malachi, their **last** Prophet, declared The Messiah would not come to take over the world, but as a tool to restore a **right heart** in God’s people. Since The Jews expected their

Messiah to take over God's **kingdom** by military force, as The **Zealots** had, they rejected Him.

That is why John 1:11 states, "**He came unto his own, and his own received him not.**" The Jews rejected **the promised seed** because Jesus, according to Malachi, didn't know He (Jesus) would come to restore the **true temple worship** (Malachi 3:1). The Jews were to keep The Law of Moses perfectly.

The reason John, The Baptist came was to bring The Jews to **repentance** or a change of **hearts and minds**. He preached, "**Repent ye! For the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Matthew 3:2-3). Now God's **kingdom** must first come; only by a change of heart and mind. The **time** of *The New Covenant* was at hand, as prophesied in Jeremiah 31:31 and Hebrews 10:16. The Jews, however, still wanted deliverance "**militarily**" from Rome.

John, The Baptist (Elijah) was to prepare the **way** (Torah) so repentance would change their hearts, but, instead, he was murdered by Herod. Herod, a false king from Edom, was placed on the throne by Rome and claimed legal right to be king because he married his brother Philip's Jewish wife. To please The Jews, he completed **the temple**, which took forty some years to build and placated them, even though Herod had no legal right to the throne.

Herod and the leading Jews had their High Priest in **the temple**. Actually, The High Priest, who was also corrupt, was chosen by The Roman Government, which was and is the last Gentile **Kingdom** which Jesus will destroy at His Second Coming. All of Judah, in that day, was waiting for their Messiah.

Jesus, **the second messenger** in Malachi 3:1, came to restore **true**

Godly worship in the temple which could easily be done through **repentance**. But they rejected Him as The High Priest, because the leaders feared they would lose their position and they were right. Their very careers were at stake.

God's Way

The Law of Moses actually blinded Israel. Most of The Torah from Adam (the first Jesus) was not under The Law of Moses as a legal document. The majority of The Torah was a matter of having **free choice**.

Adam had to choose life or death. The Abrahamic Covenant was a promise including **the covenant of the promised land** and **the covenant of the promised seed**. These covenants were under The Melchizedek Priesthood, which was a Priesthood chosen by oath from those who were **faithful** and loved **righteousness**. Even The Noahite Covenant was based upon Melchizedek. The point is that most of The Torah was under The Priesthood of Melchizedek based upon **faith**.

The written letter of The Law administered by Moses did not require **faith** for "**righteousness**." This Law of Moses was expected to be followed. If not, a Levitical Priesthood was introduced for sin, by **works**. Therefore, doing The Letter of The Law became **their righteousness** (Deuteronomy 6:25). **Faith** was not an issue. This Letter of The Law never could give **life**, but only **death**. Why? Because **The Letter "kills,"** as all humans had, and have today, the weaknesses of the flesh (Romans 6:23).

This Law was **good, Holy** and **righteous** and gave a prosperous, long life, but could not give **salvation**. This Law was based upon **works**, which never changed human nature. Only God through

Christ changes man's nature. This Law was for people who kept sinning (I Timothy 1:7-10). It was given because Israel had sinned.

God answers the problem with The Law of Moses. "**Wherefore I was grieved with that generation [Israel], and said, They do always err in their *heart*, and they have not known my ways.**" Israel, as a nation, did not know God. They feared Him because of His power, but they did not know the true God and what He wanted of them (Hebrews 3:10).

All The Prophets, who did know God, continually warned Israel what God was really wanting from them. Isaiah summed it up quite clearly in Isaiah 58. Read the chapter thoroughly. Notice it wasn't the **works** of Law which God wanted. God tells Isaiah, "**Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and show my people [Israel] their transgressions, and the house of Jacob their sins**" (Isaiah 58:1).

Israel's Sin

Isaiah 58:2 declares Israel does seek God and wants to know God's **way** and delights in approaching God. The Israelites were **church-goers**. They always congregated in **the temple**. They really followed "**the works**" of The Law. What was the problem? Isaiah states, although they fasted on The Day of Atonement, their heart's desire was only to prosper and make gain. They did not care about their brothers or the stranger. They were doing **the works** of The Law but **the works** were only supposed to bring them to Christ as a schoolmaster or a tutor (Galatians 3:24).

Physical fasting did nothing to change them. Physical fasting was supposed to make them seek God in a humble manner. It was to

make them as a child, so God could then change their nature. They should have been crying out to God, “**Change me!**” Instead, they believed doing the **works** of The Law and fasting on The Day of Atonement was good enough or all that was necessary. Then God gives His answer through Isaiah. Read Isaiah 58:6-11 again.

God is not interested in **physical fasting**. God wants you to **change** so you could be striving to be more like God. God wants you to be Holy, like Him. What does it mean to be “**like God?**” It means to try to attain a form of perfection (Matthew 5:48).

God consists of **love** and He loves His creation. He wants to continually bless everyone. Christians are to do the same. Care for the needy and be honest with all people. Do righteous judgment and not get involved in any bribery. There it is. Love God and His creation and dress and keep it as He told Adam and Eve to do (Deuteronomy 6:4).

Physical fasting when doing The Letter does nothing; but being humble as a child makes you teachable and God through Christ can **heal** you and make you whole (Isaiah 58:11-12 and Matthew 13:15).

The Old and New Testaments have the same conditions for **salvation**. *The Torah* is based upon **faith**, the same **faith** Abraham had. The Torah is the **path** or **way** to salvation through **the promised seed**.

The Law of Moses, administered by him, could never bring **righteousness**. The Letter of The Law was to make them understand how weak they were as carnal humans (Romans 5:20). The Law of Moses was only to be a **witness** of what was to come. It was to be just a **shadow** or type (Hebrews 3:5 and 10:1).

The Torah, as was proven, is far more exacting than The Letter of The Law administered by Moses. *The Torah Law* was a **path** or **way** to Christ, **the promised seed**.

A Change Of Law

Was *The Torah Law* ever **done away**? **No! Never!** *The Torah* leads Christians to Christ, **the promised seed**. **Jesus is *The Torah***.

Once Christians come to Christ, God's **mystery**, Christ will be "**in you**" (Colossians 1:27). Only then Christ will write *The Torah* in **your heart** and **mind**. This is *The New Covenant* or **testament**.

God rewrites the **conditions** of His "**testament**" by Jesus to include a people **more righteous** than Israel. Who are they? It is anyone, whether Israelite or Gentile, who **loves righteousness** and is **faithful**. That is what Peter said. The Priesthood of Melchizedek is based upon **righteousness** and **faith**. *The New Testament* is the revelation of the new "**will**" of God administered by **the promised seed, The Christ**.

God continued His **story** and it is the same **story** which was started in **the garden**. That **story** is *The Torah* or the **way** to **salvation**. The Law is never done away but now is under *The New Covenant*. Christ, as The Mediator (executor) writes The Law, not in ink or **tables of stone**, but in Christian's **hearts** by changing their **very nature** (II Corinthians 3:6-8 and Romans 2).

The entire *Bible* is God's **story** about His "**will**" administered by Christ, **the promised seed**. How does God change your very **nature** through **Christ**?

CHAPTER 11

THE LAST DAYS

The Bible “story” or “theme” does not have a separation between *The Old* and *New Testaments*. God’s “word” continues His “testament” or “will.” The physical birth of Jesus begins with the last beast of Daniel, The Roman Empire, dominating the known world. Daniel’s prophecy reveals Christ is to come during these last days of the fourth beast (Daniel 2).

Malachi, the last *Old Testament* Prophet, ties *The Old Testament* “story” with *The New Testament*. Malachi tells The Jews, including The Priesthood who were found morally corrupt, that God would send a **messenger**.

So Elijah was sent to turn the hearts of the children (The Jews) to the fathers of old, such as Noah, Abraham, Jacob and all the others from the time of Abel. Matthew 11 states that Elijah **to come** is John, The Baptist.

So you can see *The Old Testament* story is continued in *The New Testament*. **The promised seed** who will restore paradise to come. Messiah, The Christ, is born as the last world Gentile Kingdom rules the known world. Jesus was not prophesied in *The TANAK* that He would come twice. What happened?

All the prophecies in Revelation 13 and Daniel 7 declare these four beasts will come out of the great sea, The Mediterranean.

History validates this fact and **the promised seed** was about to enter the world. Jesus came just as prophesied.

History Repeats Itself

Another mysterious theme in *The Bible* is each time God restores mankind to His **ways**, most individuals from Adam to the present **eventually** start corrupting themselves.

God, through His Prophets, keeps preaching *The Gospel* of His **kingdom**, but each time **the good seed** is planted, Satan comes along and spreads tares or weeds, corrupting The Word of God. History truly repeats itself. Humanity, when trying to become righteous by their own **efforts** or **works** will eventually **corrupt** themselves, even if they live for one thousand years (II Peter 3). Then a dramatic change occurs with Christ's birth.

The Promised Seed

Humanity always believes they can be “**good**” or “**righteous**” on their own, as Job felt. After Adam and Eve sinned, to the time of Jesus, history keeps repeating itself. Mankind didn't know it, but they needed **the promised seed**. Only that child of Adam and Eve's lineage could **restore** paradise with The Tree of Life or **salvation**.

It is a great wonder why mankind in general doesn't understand *The Old Testament*. It is only through **the promised seed** that The Tree of Life can be restored. That is why there is no other way under heaven whereby you can be **saved**. The **Messiah** restores **the promised land** and also gives **salvation** (Acts 4:12). Jesus, The Christ is **the promised seed**! Both *The Old* and *New Testaments* proclaim it. It is **only** through Adam and Eve's heritage,

the promised seed, that God's **kingdom** can be restored. *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament* should really be one continuing “**story**” or God's “**will**.” Without the entire complete story of this theme, you cannot understand the **complete story** in *The Bible*.

You will find that *The Old Testament* defines *The New Testament* and *The New* defines *The Old Testament*. Only in *The Old Testament*, you find Moses prophesies Christ. God told Moses that just as he was faithful in building His **house** (Israel), so a Prophet, Jesus, **the promised seed**, would build God's (Israel and now with The Gentile) **house** (Deuteronomy 18:18). Actually, this new spiritual house to be restored by Christ, includes a remnant of Israel and an innumerable number of Gentiles (Romans 11).

Notice, God will put His “**word**” in this Prophet's mouth. This Prophet is to be the **very “word” of God** (John 1:1). Jesus, to be The Christ, had to **live by every “word” of God**. Since Jesus was The Word of God, He only spoke and followed God's “**word**” (John 5:30). That is why Paul said in Hebrews 1:1-2 that in these **last days**, God speaks to everyone, not by The Prophets, but by His Son, Jesus, because Christ is The Word of God. He is that **Prophet** that God told Moses would come and speak God's “**word**.” That is why Jesus, before going to heaven, said to His Disciples, “**All things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me**” (Luke 24:44).

To guarantee Jesus was **the promised seed**, everything Jesus did proved He was The Christ. That is why *The Gospels* reveal Jesus' life from birth to His resurrection! That is why Christ said that if you don't believe the “**words**” He spoke, then believe “**the**

works” He did (John 14:11). Jesus lived His life according to *the scriptures, The TANAK*, to prove **the works** He did was **The Work of God**. What is God’s “**work**?”

Work Of God

Many declare all Christians must do The Work of God. So what is God’s “**work**” and secondly, how can humans do the same “**work**” God does?

For nearly six thousand years, man has tried to do God’s “**work**” and in the end, mankind always fails. As well-meaning as a person can be or tries to be, how can a human do what only God can do? Job had to learn that lesson.

In *The Old Testament*, from Adam and Eve to this very day, individuals have tried to decide **good** and **evil** on their own. Humanity has tried to do **the work**, but each and every time they fail. Just look at today’s world and you can see the world is at the brink of world catastrophe.

You must realize **paradise** can only come through **the promised seed**. Why is it so useless to keep trying to do a “**work**” only Christ can do? Jesus, Himself will tell you what The Work of God is.

CHAPTER 12

GOD'S WORK

Jesus healed a man by a pool called Bethesda. This was during The Sabbath, A High Day during A Feast of The Jews (John 5:1-2). After the man was healed, Christ told him to take up his bed and walk. The Jews became hysterical because Jesus healed the man on The Sabbath. They asked Him why He worked on The Sabbath. Now for a remarkable answer: “But Jesus answered them, My Father [God] worketh hitherto, and I work” (John 5:17).

Many believe this answer is in respect to the traditional commandments The Jews “**made up**” in how to keep The Sabbath “Holy.” That isn’t what Christ was really saying. Read Christ’s answer again. Jesus was telling them He and God, His Father, both **work, even** on The Sabbath, as long as it is “**a good work.**” The word for “*work*” in Greek is the word “*ergozomai.*” It conveys “**hard work**” and **not** merely some human Sabbath command concerning The Sabbath. That is why Jesus, at other times when He healed on The Sabbath, referred to pulling an ox out of a ditch. That is the hard work Jesus and His Father do even on The Sabbath.

In Greek, the word “work” in Galatians is “*ergo*” or “deeds.” But in this case, Jesus gives the Greek word for “**hard work**” as “*ergozomai.*” The point is, they were asking Him about the **type of work** Christ and God do, even on The Sabbath. Whatever work they do, is, indeed only **hard work.**

Many believe the subject text of this **subject** had ended, but it had not. Read on and Jesus describes in detail **the hard work** that God and He do. Reading the complete text (John 5), Jesus first remarks that **He can do nothing of Himself**. He states He only does **the work** that He sees His Father does. **God's work** and **the work** Jesus does are exactly the same. This is God's **work** and can only be done by God and His Son, Jesus. Man cannot do this "**work**." What kind of "**work**" is this? Jesus gives the answer in John 5:21. "**For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth [gives life] them; even so the Son quickeneth [gives life] whom he will.**"

Can you grasp God's "**work**?" This is speaking about **salvation!** No human can **save** anyone. Only God who has **life** and has given His Son the ability to give life also. This is God's "**work**." God's "**work**" is **salvation**. Only God, The Father and His Son can give life.

No matter how hard the **work** or on what day, God and Christ **will save** you along with the rest of mankind. That is God's **will** or **testament** (I John 4:14). Paul restated this **work** in I Timothy 2:4-5. "**Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God, and one mediator [The Promised Seed] between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.**"

How clear can it get for you? Jesus continues explaining God's "**work**" which no human can do. Christ reveals that all judgment is given by The Father to Him, as The Father judges no man. Why? Because God is God and Jesus is The Son of Man. It would not be right to have God judge humans who never experienced the weakness of human nature. That is why Jesus had to be human. He is The Son of Man. He came from human flesh through His

mother Mary. That is **righteous judgment**. Because of the lessons Christians have learned in this life, they as **the saints**, will be qualified to judge the world (I Corinthians 6:2). Righteous judgment is composed of “like-kind” both the **judge** and the **jury**.

In the rest of John 5, Jesus relates to the time of world judgment and that it is God who **bears witness** that Jesus is **the righteous judge**. Then Christ ends the chapter, that it is not Jesus who will answer The Jews but Moses, because Moses was the one who wrote of Christ and **the work** which would be done by Him.

The subject continues in Chapter 6, by the feeding of the great multitude with five loaves and two fishes. Christ summarizes this feeding of the multitude with: “**Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed**” (John 6:27).

Then they asked him, “**What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?**” What is the only way humans can do God’s “**work**” is the question. Read the answer: “**This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent**” (John 6:28-29).

Nearly two chapters clearly define God’s **work**. God’s **work** is **salvation** done by and through Jesus, **The Word**. Man cannot do that work. Only Christ was sent by The Father to **save** the world (I John 4:14). Humanity’s part in God’s **work** is “**to believe**” what Jesus said. Your part is having **faith**, by believing what Christ said. You are to be a witness unto Christ (Acts 1:8).

That is why it states in Hebrews 1:1-2 that “**God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the**

fathers by the prophets. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.” In times past God had *the gospel* preached by The Prophets of old, but in these last days (of the fourth beast) God does His work through and by His Son, Jesus. Whatever Jesus says, you are to believe. That is The Work of God. Jesus is The Administrator of God’s “testament” or “will.” Christ is **the promised seed**.

Christian Work

Since only God, through His Son, Jesus, can do “**the work of salvation**,” then what work can Christians do? Remember God’s story, *The Bible*, is God’s “**testament**” or “**will**.” Christ is the **administrator** of that “**will**.” As Christians, you have a very important **work** in reference to God’s “**will**.” You are to be God’s **witnesses** to His “**will**.” That is exactly what Christ told His Disciples to do in Acts 1:8, just before He went to heaven. They are to be witnesses of God’s **testament to the world**. That is a **commission** God has given to each and every Christian. What type of a **witness**? Jesus plainly said you are to witness **Christ “in you”** (Colossians 1:27). It is a **mystery** to everyone but **the saints** (Ephesians 1:1-5). After all, only witnesses attest to the validity of “**a will**” until “**the will**” is ready to be executed and completed. The witnesses must know **the will** is true. Being a **witness of Christ “in you”** has a greater meaning than just being like Christ. Witnessing Jesus testifies God is **true** and means exactly what God’s “**will**” gives to all humans. There is no other name but Jesus who makes that decision at the time of The White Throne Judgment. That is why only Jesus has **the right to judge**. Christ paid the penalty of your sins and is the heir of **all things** (Hebrews 1:1-2). Rather than humans doing The **Work of God**, you are to show your **faithfulness** by living every **Word of God** (Matthew

4:4). By living God's "**word**," you witness God's "**will**." You disclose God's mystery by living it in the likeness of His Son, Jesus. That is your requirement for **salvation**. You are to be like Christ as one of His witnesses.

Old And New Wine

This message of **salvation** is like **new wine**. Wine symbolizes Christ's blood which He spilled for you. The old wine in *The Old Testament* was only the blood of animals and, therefore, never could give life. Read Hebrews 10.

The Old Wine only promised a prosperous, healthy, long life as well as deliverance from all enemies. This Abrahamic promise was to take place in God's **promised land** of Palestine. It all had to do with God's "**rest**" in **The Land of Palestine**. There was no salvation involved. This was God's **kingdom** on earth, but gifted "no salvation." Read all of Genesis 15. Notice the promise: "**And he [God] said unto him, I am the Lord God, that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it**" (Genesis 15:7).

Why did God promise this land to Abraham? Genesis 15:6 reveals that this is Abraham's first act of **faith** when he believed God and left the Chaldeans' country. This act of faith guaranteed the land forever but still did not guarantee **salvation**.

The **new wine** was an **added promise** to the first promise. This added guarantee by God was based upon a **second** act of **faith** by Abraham. "**And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time [an oath], And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou have done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: That in**

blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies. And in thy seed shall all the nations [world] of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice [God's word]" (Genesis 22:15-18).

This is a **second covenant** or contract God gave to Abraham. **The first** is the land, where God's **kingdom** will physically be, but **the second promise** included **salvation of the world**. Wow!

The Work of God is **the salvation of the world** as a promise to Abraham. That is God's "**work**" done by and through His Son, Jesus, The Christ. Christ was **the promised seed** in Genesis 3:15.

CHAPTER 13

ONLY ONE TESTAMENT

You can never understand *The New Testament* without knowing or having a reasonable understanding of *The Old Testament*. Neither can you understand *The Old Testament* without *The New Testament*. Why this confusion? Some Christians do not believe in *The Old Testament*. Others, like those in Jewish religions, reject *The New Testament*. Why the confusion, what is the reason? You are about to find out.

One Testament

By dividing *The Bible* into two books, known as *Old* and *New Testaments*, you are believing in two different “wills” or “testaments.”

When The Disciples asked Jesus to teach them to pray, He gave them what is known as The Lord’s Prayer (Matthew 6). What did Christ tell His Disciples (**witnesses**) to pray for? First he said to pray only to God, The Father. “**Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.**” Immediately following, He said, “**Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth.**” Read Matthew 6.

Christians are to pray for God’s **will** or God’s **testament** to come to the earth. This refers to the second coming of Christ where He establishes God’s **kingdom** on earth. There cannot be two “wills” of God – only **one**. You must prove this is **biblically** true. When studying *The Bible* as **one book with “one testament”** it will open

up your **biblical understanding** and **spiritual growth**.

Before The New Testament

There was a four-hundred-year lapse of time between *The Old and New Testaments*. In fact, *The New Testament* took another one hundred years to be written. It would only be natural to think these two testaments are **two books**. However, they are only **one book with one continuing testament**.

Prior to the writing of *The New Testament*, *The Old Testament* was only known as *the scriptures*. They were known as *the scriptures* because the other scriptures were not written as yet. The Apostle Peter said, “**As also in all his epistles [letters] speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction**” (II Peter 3:16).

Peter knew Paul's letters were *scripture*. Read the book, *The Original Bible*, for details. The point is, Peter knew what Christ, His Apostles and scribes were writing was indeed *scripture*. *The Old and New Testament* are truly one book or scripture. They, together, are The Word of God. The Prophets of old, before *The New Testament*, had God's Word. Then Jesus and His Apostles, with their scribes, spoke God's “**word**.” There are not two parts to God's book but one complete book – God's **total “will” or “testament”** as revealed by Christ and His Apostles.

New And Old Covenant

The entire *Bible* as God's “testament” or “**will**” can be proven. God's “**will**” is a mystery reserved for the **faithful** and His **saints**

(Ephesians 1:9). God's "**will**" has a "**work**" that only God and His Son, Jesus can do. Salvation can only come from God through His Son, **the promised seed**. How does God produce **salvation**?

The Apostle Paul reveals **salvation** only comes through Christ. "**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming**" (I Corinthians 15:22-23).

Paul tells you at the end, when Jesus puts down all of **God's enemies, including death**, then He turns all control back to God, The Father to be "**all and in all**" (I Corinthians 15:24-28). That is exactly what you read earlier, which is God's "**will**" or "**testament**." This is God's purpose to be "**all and in all**." God's entire creation will be of God and ruled by His Royal family.

God has given you this inheritance from His "**testament**" or "**will**" by His own counsel or intentions (Ephesians 1:11). It is God's "**will**" to give you **salvation**. This is what God predestined. That is The **Work of God**. When Jesus destroys the enemy, then you will be **Holy** like God or God will be "**all and in all**." What is the outcome of this **inheritance** (grace, a gift)? Read Ephesians 1:10. "**That in the dispensation [God's estate] of the fullness [completion] of times he might gather together in one [God is "all in all"] all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him.**"

This is the "**testament**" or "**will**" of God. This is the **final inheritance**. God intends to **save the whole world** (I Timothy 2:4). To get the full story, read the book *The White Throne Judgment*.

There you have it. God's "**testament**" or "**will**" is the same al-

ways, whether in *The Old* or *New Testament*. Since both books of *The Bible* have **only one** “will,” what is the difference between these two parts of *scripture*? Paul clearly tells you the difference. “**Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will [testament], O God. Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the Law; Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second**” (Hebrews 10:7-9).

Plainly, Jesus intends to take away “the **old**” and establish “the **new**,” not to *The Old Covenant* of The Letter of The Law but *The New Covenant*, “the **spirit**” of The Law (II Corinthians 3:1-6). God’s “will” or “testament” is one and the same, whether in *The Old Testament* or *The New Testament*. There is really **one book or one testament** of God’s “will” whether new or old. What is the difference?

Old Covenant

Both books of *The Bible* are **one testament** or God’s “will,” which is “salvation.” What was the purpose of *The Old Covenant*? “*The Torah*” in English means “The Law.” The “**Torah**” has much greater meaning than the English word “law.” “Law” conveys “the idea of what is permitted to do by society or not.” Most call “**breaking the law**” a crime. “Torah” is “a way or a path to life.” “*The Torah*” is “a process” and “not merely limited to the many **do**’s and **don**’ts.” “The Torah” is “a **teaching**” or “a **learning** to have a blissful life in this world” and “**eternity** in the world to come or God’s **kingdom**.”

In *The New Testament*, the Greek word “*nomos*” means the same

thing as “*The Torah*” in Hebrew. The definition of “*nomos*” is “to parcel out food to animals as prescriptive” or “how to have a whole healthy **life**.” It is synonymous with Torah. In a later chapter you will discover why it is related to food for animals. Also, *The Torah* has **many covenants or contracts** made by God.

Five of God’s Covenants in The Torah are as follows:

- 1 Covenant of “**choice**” between Adam, Eve and God in choosing The Tree of Life or The Tree of Good and Evil. No works were required by Adam and Eve. God had done all the work of creating His **rest** or His **kingdom**. God has created His house for His family. Everything in it was very good (Genesis 1:31). When Adam and Eve sinned, they, because of lack of faith in The Father, broke God’s covenant and The Tree of Life or “paradise” was lost.
- 2 The second covenant by God was a curse or penalty for breaking the first contract “of free choice.” Adam, because Eve led him to disobey God, was now going to have to survive on his own and be responsible over his wife Eve and the family. Eve could not be trusted, so now her husband was her master. Now she would desire her husband and have pain in childbirth, depicting the future crucifixion of Christ who would save her.

However, Adam and Eve and their progeny would be restored to The Tree of Life and God’s **rest** or **kingdom** through their **promised seed**, The Christ.

Satan, as God’s **adversary** would be Adam and Eve’s enemy until **the promised seed**, The Christ destroyed him. Satan, from then

on, would be a snake and the lowest in the animal kingdom.

- 3 What is known as The Noahite Covenant, by God, included the entire world or all children born from Noah and his family. This, eventually, as families grew into nations, included Gentiles and Israel. God signed this contract with the appearance of the rainbow after the flood. This “**world covenant**” promised no more flood and only a prosperous life, if kept. Murder by humans brought immediate justice by the family of the murdered victim. Also blood was not to be eaten, as God’s “**word**” explained human life is in the blood. Much of The Noahite Covenant had to do with the church’s decision not requiring Gentiles to be circumcised nor legally required to keep The Law (Acts 15).

- 4 This **covenant** of God was made with one person. It is known as The Abrahamic Covenant. It is not based upon The Letter or “**works**” of The Law. This contract in The Torah was conditional, based upon **faith** or **trust** in God for **righteousness**. Its Priesthood was not of “**the works**” or Letter of The Law but an unconditional promise because of faith. This is exactly as Adam and Eve’s contract which was based upon faith by free choice.

This **covenant** actually had **two promises**. One has to do with the **land** and the other with **salvation**. This **first promise** was guaranteed because Abraham, in **faith**, left his home in Ur of The Chaldees or Babylon, and went by **faith** to the **promised land**, looking **forward** in **faith** for **salvation** (Genesis 15:6-7).

This second act of **faith** which promised **salvation** through Abraham’s **seed**, was his act of offering Isaac as a **sacrifice** (Genesis 22:15-18).

- 5 God made the fifth covenant with Israel because they had sinned. It **was added** to The Torah as a legal document in a court of Law. Notice what Moses said to Israel about this personal, **added covenant**. “**The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us [Israel], who are all of us here alive this day**” (Deuteronomy 5:3).

This contract or covenant by God was only made with The Nation of Israel having Moses as “**the administrator**.” That is why this contract was called **The Law of Moses**. This legal Law had to be kept perfectly. If they broke **one part** they were guilty of breaking the **entire law** (James 2:10). By not keeping any part, they **frauded** the **covenant** God made with Israel. Why was this covenant different than the **contract** made with Adam and Eve, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and so on? This **covenant** was different because Israel had **sinned** or **transgressed** by building the **golden calf** and then worshipping it.

Read Galatians 3:19, “**Wherefore then serveth the Law? It was added because of transgressions [sin] till the seed [Christ] should come to whom the promise [Genesis 22] was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.**” This is the account. “**These words the Lord spoke unto all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud, and of the thick darkness, with a great voice: and he added no more. And he wrote them in two tables of stone [Ten Commandments] and delivered them unto me**” (Deuteronomy 5:22).

Israel sinned before they even received the two tables (tablets) when God spoke The Ten Commandments from Mount Sinai (Acts 7:38). Now, because they sinned, God **added** The Law of Moses which had to be kept “perfectly” or they were guilty of **sin**. This

covenant with Israel became known as *The Old Covenant*; and when God made this **contract** with Israel, **it was only to last until Christ came. This is the old wine based upon their sinful nature.** This **covenant** was made because they had a **wrong heart** (Deuteronomy 5:29). Even after they went through **the wilderness**, they could not enter **God's rest**, which was **the land**, because of a **wrong heart**. Paul said in Hebrews 3:9-11, "**Wherefore, I was grieved with that generation, and said, they do always err in their heart; and they have not known my ways.**"

Israel had a **wrong heart** and didn't even know what the true God wanted. Because of this, they lost **the promises** which were made with **the fathers** and even **lost the right** to have **free choice** as God had given them from the time of Adam and Eve to Jacob. All **covenants** previously given to mankind had the option of **free choice** and were based upon **faith** through **The Order of The Priesthood of Melchizedek.**

Now, a new Priesthood had to be instituted based upon **human works** to be kept **perfectly**. Israel had to do "**the work.**" This was "**the added law**" to The Torah as the **fifth covenant** in **The Law or Torah**. This Priesthood was for carnal people, as a **carnal commandment**, based upon people with a **wrong heart** because of the weakness of the **flesh** (human beings) to sin (Hebrews 7:16-19 and I Timothy 1:7-10). This, **biblically**, is known as *The Old Covenant* and was based upon The Law of Moses and not The Law of Christ. Remember, the word "**carnal**" in Greek is "**animal-like**" or "**as a beast.**"

This *Old Covenant* had physical blessings promising a long earthly life in the **promised land**, but gave no gift of **salvation**. This was The Abrahamic "promise" only in regard to the **land** but never included **eternal life** in paradise. This was **all** *The Old Covenant*

promised. If one point of **The Law** under Moses was broken, they were guilty of all and received the **curses** listed in Deuteronomy 30-33.

This *Old Covenant* caused the split between The Pharisees and Sadducees. The Sadducees did not believe in **the resurrection**, because they knew *The Old Covenant* only applied to the **land** and a long, prosperous human existence, but without the gift of **salvation**. On the other hand, The Pharisees did believe in **a resurrection**. This *Old Covenant* also caused Israel to believe in a Messiah who would come and restore Israel in **the promised land** by military force. When Jesus came, they did not expect Him to sacrifice His life for the forgiveness of sins.

All of Judah was waiting and expecting their Messiah to take The Roman Empire by force and be able to give freedom to The Jews. To this very day most Jews are still waiting for The Messiah to come “**militarily**.” That is why they do not accept Jesus as The Messiah. They believe The Messiah, when He does come, will take over the world **by military force**.

Note: This fifth covenant in The Torah was called *The Old Covenant* when in reality it is **the fifth covenant** in The Torah called The Law of Moses. In *The Book of Hebrews*, this *Old Covenant* with Israel was only to last until Jesus came. *The Old Covenant* in Hebrews 8:13 states this *Old Covenant* is to vanish away and be replaced by Christ when He came in the flesh.

New Covenant

Many believe with the abolishment of *The Old Covenant*, which finally occurred at the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D., that God’s Law was no longer **in force**. Is that true? If *The Old Cov-*

enant ceases, does The Law also vanish? *The New Covenant* answers this question. What is *The New Covenant*? In Hebrews 10:9, 16-17, Paul defines *The New Covenant* or contract. “**Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will** [testament], **O God. He taketh away the first** [*Old Covenant*], **that he may establish the second** [*New Covenant*]” (Hebrews 10:9).

What is *The New Covenant*? “**This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them. And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more**” (Hebrews 10:16-17).

The Law isn't done away; it is now written into one's heart and mind. This is the **change of nature** which is necessary to become **Holy like God**. This *New Covenant* is taken right out of Jeremiah, The Prophet's prophecy (Jeremiah 31:31).

It isn't God's Law which is done away, but the “**works**” which demanded they be kept perfectly. That is why Paul in Galatians said Christ removed the **curse** of The Law because in *The New Covenant*, God does not remember **your sins** anymore. How plain!

The New Covenant is a **spiritual covenant** with God and Christ, **saving everyone from themselves**. It is God and His Son, Jesus who do the **work**. Just as the work which was done in The Garden of Eden. God will do the **work** through Christ, the executor or mediator of God's “**will**.” With the end of *The Old Covenant*, man's “work” or “effort” **ceased**. God once again does **the work**.

There is only **one testament**, not two or three or more. God does not change His “**will**” but God has changed His **covenants** or **contracts** according to the varying conditions caused by the people. Every person who has an **estate** to leave to his **heirs** may change

his **will** according to how the **heirs may behave**. The **covenants change but not the estate** or what is left to the **heirs**.

God's **estate** or **dispensation is salvation by grace** in paradise, The Garden of Eden. That is why Christ came to **restore what was lost** (Matthew 18:11).

There is only "**one will**" but **many covenants**.

CHAPTER 14

ONE STORY

Whether you are reading *The Old Testament* or *The New Testament*, both books have proven to have only “one testament” or “will.” That “one testament” is to restore humanity to paradise so everyone can have eternal life. To call *The Old and New Testaments* by those two names is an error since there is only “one testament” combining both books.

Now you are ready to continue God’s story and find there is but **one story**. The so-called *New and Old Testaments* are combined as “one book” with “one continuing story.”

Bible Written As Two Books

Why has *The Bible*, God’s story, been written as two separate books? Jesus gives you the answer in a rather difficult scripture to understand. Referring to John, The Baptist as Elijah to come, Jesus said in Matthew 11:12, “**And from the days of John, The Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.**”

Why did Christ say this when referring to John, The Baptist? For hundreds of years this verse by Jesus has caused people to wonder. The truth is, you will find it means exactly what it states. This **text** by Jesus is one of the most **profound prophecies** in the gospels. Christ’s **purpose** in making such a statement is to describe who

John, The Baptist was and why he had to come. John was fulfilling prophecy. This prophecy was of **worldwide** significance and affects all of human existence to this **very day**. In Matthew 11:7 when the multitude listened to Christ, **“Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind.”**

Later you will see Jesus was saying John is not a **revolutionary** as were The **Zealots**. For over four hundred years, from the last *Old Testament* Prophet, Malachi, The Jews were trying to take back **the kingdom** by force. The entire history of The Maccabees was revolutionary. In 167 B.C., Antiochus Epiphanes put the abomination of desolation in **the temple**. Finally The Maccabees restored **the temple** and took control of Judah, which was called The Feast of Lights. The Feast of Dedication in the winter celebrates this victory. Then in 67 B.C. Julius Caesar and The Roman Empire took control again by military force. That is why The Jews came to John, The Baptist, to see if he, as a Zealot, would help them restore **the kingdom** by force. Again Jesus remarked, **“But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet”** (Matthew 11:8-9).

Then Christ reveals John's commission from God. **“For this is he, of whom it is written [prophecy], Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare the way before thee”** (Matthew 11:10). Jesus summarizes His previous remarks with the main text: **“From the days of John, The Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent [Zealots] take it by force”** (Matthew 11:12). There it is. Jesus quoted from Malachi and the state of **Judah** (Israel had gone into captivity) during Malachi's time until John, The Baptist. How

clear the text. From Malachi's day, the history is all about violence in order to restore God's **kingdom**. For four hundred years, starting with Malachi, The Prophet until John, The Baptist, Judah was in a state of terror and violence. This was prophecy which became history from Antiochus Epiphanes to The Maccabees Revolution till Rome took Judah captive.

Christ revealed how from Malachi until **the fourth beast** in Daniel 7, (which is Rome) would always experience **violence** or **war** to attempt to control God's **kingdom**.

Then Jesus declares, "**For all the Prophets and the Law [Torah] prophesied until John**" (Matthew 11:13). Christ's conclusion tells who John, The Baptist was in Matthew 11:14, "**And if ye will receive it, this is Elias [Elijah] which is to come.**" What a prophecy! This is earth shaking, and includes the **entire world**. God's **kingdom**, from the beginning of God's **rest**, has been **violent** or always taken by force or **militarily**. Now a change is about to occur with **John's message** and Christ states, "**He that hath ears to hear, let him hear** (Matthew 11:15). That **message** which proves *The Old and New Testaments* are really **one story** about God's theme, which is **God's "testament"** or **God's "will"** administered by Christ, **the promised seed**.

Two Messengers

The Book of Malachi is the last Prophet in *The Old Testament*. No other Prophet spoke again until John, The Baptist, who was "**Elijah to come**" to prepare the **way** for Jesus, when He came on the scene. This prophecy was clearly told by Malachi over four hundred years before John and Christ came. There is no historical break between Malachi and *The New Testament Gospels*. Malachi 3:1 reveals two messengers: "**Behold, I will send my messenger,**

and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, said the Lord of hosts."

There are two messengers prophesied by Malachi. One was to prepare the **way** and the second messenger reveals Christ's **first coming**. This was to be Christ's only coming. If The Jews would have accepted their Messiah, God's **kingdom** would have come. *The Gospel of Mark* is considered to be the oldest or first of *The Four Gospels* written. Notice how Mark begins: "**The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God; As it is written [Malachi 3:1] in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee**" (Mark 1:1-2).

Jesus said this messenger, John, The Baptist was Elijah; and notice what Malachi 4:5-6 reveals: "**Behold I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he [Elijah] shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.**" This is exactly what Luke 1:17 stated John, The Baptist would do. He made the **path** straight to Christ. What did John say? In Matthew 3:8, he told the people, especially The Pharisees and The Sadducees, to bring forth **fruit for repentance**. No military violence or force but **repentance**. If they did not accept Christ, then God would curse the earth (Malachi 4).

It becomes obviously clear, *The Book of Mark* should follow Malachi as **one story** instead of **two separate scriptures**.

John, The Baptist was the next Prophet after Malachi to continue

God's **story**. *The Book of Malachi* and *The Book of Mark* are **one continuing book** with **one continual story**.

But the author, God, decided to have *The Books of Malachi* and *Mark* written almost **four hundred** years apart. They had to wait 430 years, just like The Abrahamic Promise for The Amorite's sins (violence) which had to be fulfilled. Judah was a violent and corrupt nation with its zealots.

Christ's First Coming

Many have difficulty understanding *The Old Testament* prophesied that there would be **two comings** for The Messiah. Why?

His first coming was to do away with God's **kingdom** being taken **militarily** or by **violence** (Isaiah 40:1-2). Jesus came the **first time** to bring **peace** to the **world**. Also Isaiah declares that God **no longer would remember their sins**. God had pardoned them. These **two promises** by God is why Jesus came the first time. Read what the angel told Joseph about marrying Mary: "**And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shall call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sin**" (Matthew 1:21).

Then Luke records what the heavenly host said. "**Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men**" (Luke 2:14). *The Old and New Testament* both **reveal the purpose** of Christ's **first coming** to the earth. Jesus came to forgive **sin** and also bring **world peace**. **Military wars** were to be done away with, if only they accepted Jesus, The Christ.

The Need Of A Second Coming

John 1:11-12 declares that Jesus came to His own, The Jews, and

they knew Him not. But those who did, had their sins forgiven, as prophesied and became God's Sons.

Malachi also said the same. “**Behold, I will send you Elijah [John, The Baptist] the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he [John] shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers lest, I come and smite the earth with a curse**” (Malachi 4:5-6).

Christ's first coming was to forgive sin and bring **peace** to the earth. In Isaiah 40:1-2, God's **kingdom**, from this point on, was to give peace to the **world** with no more **warfare** for Judah. They didn't know it but **world peace** could have occurred at Christ's first coming.

The Jews and the hierarchy especially, feared they would lose their lucrative positions. Herod, The King, knew he was a **fraud** for he was an Edomite and not of **the seed** of David. This is why he killed all the children under two years of age at the time Christ was born. If Judah had accepted Christ as King, Rome would have fallen at that very time.

Finally The Jewish hierarchy (The High Priest, Pharisees and The Sadducees) incited The Jews to have Rome crucify Jesus. Back to Malachi.

The Curse

Malachi, whose name in Hebrew means “The Messenger,” reveals the state of Judah's anticipation when Jesus was **born**. In Malachi 3:1 the **second messenger, Christ**, when He suddenly comes to His **temple**, even the **messenger** of the **covenant**, who Judah de-

lights in, will be expecting The **Messiah in earnest**. When Jesus did come, all of Judah were always looking for Him.

Yet when Jesus came to His own, they (**Judah**) **knew him not** (John 1:11). Why did The Jews who delighted in The Messiah's "**coming**" **reject** Him? John answers the question. "**For the law** [Torah] **was given by Moses, but grace** [forgiveness] **and truth came by Jesus Christ**" (John 1:17). This is precisely what Jesus warned about, what all The **Prophets** and The **Law prophesied till John**. What did The Law given by Moses and The **Prophets** say? All The Law and The Prophets prophesied **The Kingdom of God** would be taken by force or militarily. With John preparing Christ's way, **the kingdom** was to come by peaceful measures. That is why Jesus came the first time, to bring **world peace** with the forgiveness of **sin**.

Judah rejected John, The Baptist and Herod (the false king) beheaded him and The Jewish hierarchy had Rome, **the fourth beast, crucify** Jesus. Now, to proceed to what Malachi prophesied would happen.

The ending verse in Malachi reveals John, The Baptist's commission; and if the people didn't accept it, something **dreadful** would occur (Malachi 4:6). Malachi relates, "Because Judah and Rome, **the fourth beast**, rejected Christ, a **curse** from that time **forward** would be placed on the **world**."

In Jesus' end-time prophecy to His Disciples, He relates future **world events** till He comes the second time at "**the end of times**" (Matthew 24:1-31). Notice that in Matthew 24:6-8, Jesus said there would be nothing but **wars, kingdom against kingdom, pestilences, famines** and so on and these were **just the beginning of sorrows**. Jesus, The Christ warns that because the world

rejected Him (especially His own), the **world would be cursed**. Malachi 4:6 says the same.

The world (Rome) and especially His own, Judah, rejected The **Messiah**; therefore, the **world** would be **cursed** until His return. Religion has caused more wars because **The Kingdom of God** would **continue** to be taken by **force or violence** (militarily). The **world rejected God's peace** by His Son, Jesus. Notice, the **final curse**.

God's final curse would come to be known as "**the great tribulation**." "**For then shall be great tribulation** [war], **such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be**" (Matthew 24:21). This is when sin prevails in the world and there is nothing but violence. Violence is "**the fullness**" or result of sin. Truly a time of great tribulation. It is a time like the days of Noah when every thought was evil.

Then immediately after the **great tribulation** (final sorrow), Christ will come. Malachi concludes the **curse** and its result before Jesus once again brings **world peace**. Malachi 3:16-18 distinguishes between those who had rejected Christ at His first coming until the end time when those who have **faith** in Christ are changed at Jesus' second coming. Faithful Christians are called God's **jewels**. These relate to **The Bride of Christ** who meet Jesus in the clouds. Then what happens? Remember, this is at Christ's **second coming** and not The White Throne Judgment as some believe.

The **final curse**, because Christ was rejected at His first coming, is unleashed. Because the children did not return to the **fathers** (Abel, Noah and Abraham) they will receive God's wrath on The Day of The Lord. "**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn**

as an oven, and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch” (Malachi 4:1). Then the rest of Malachi 4:2-4 states the righteous will **have healing** in their wings and **the saved** will grow up in **the kingdom, the millennium**, when God’s **kingdom** will have **peace** (Isaiah 2). The wicked will be ashes under their feet. This is the result of when Christ, **the saints** and God’s angels will end **The Battle of Armageddon** as written in *The Book of Revelation*. This is not The White Throne Judgment, as some think, because there will be **no ashes** after **the judgment**. The New Heaven and Earth are both **spiritual**. No humans will exist anymore. No ashes to walk over.

At The White Throne Judgment, there will be no humans. There will be a **new heaven** and **new earth** after The White Throne Judgment. Read Revelation 20, 21 and 22. God will make **all things new**. When God makes a new heaven and new earth, there will be no earth to have ashes. These ashes are those killed at Armageddon.

The Day of The Lord will **be the end of human rule** and God, with Christ and everyone in heaven, on the earth and under the earth will become **Holy** like God. God’s “**will**” or “**testament**” will be **executed** and Jesus will turn everything **back** to God so He can be “**all and in all**” (I Corinthians 15:1-29). This is **the purpose** of God’s “**will**,” which is to be “**all and in all**.”

Malachi and *The New Testament* are truly **one continuing story** with **one testament** with Jesus, The Christ as The Executor. Now **the story** continues with Christ’s commission by God as The One to bring **peace** and the forgiveness of **sin** to all the **world**.

CHAPTER 15

WHAT IS THE GOSPEL

The word “gospel” in the Greek merely means “Good News.” Most people believe “the gospel” is The Good News of God’s “kingdom.”

Christ came to preach The Gospel of The Kingdom. After John, The Baptist (Elijah) was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee preaching The Gospel or **Good News** of God’s **kingdom**. Most Christians will say, “See The Gospel is God’s **kingdom**.” The real question should be “**what**” is God’s **kingdom** (Mark 1:14)? You will find it is even much more than you could have imagined.

God’s Kingdom

When Christ began to preach The Gospel of God’s “**kingdom**” he said, “**The time is fulfilled, and The Kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe The Gospel**” (Mark 1:14-15). This is an astounding remark by Christ. All of Judah was waiting for The Messiah to come and establish God’s **kingdom**. But how? By **force**, like all The Zealots in the past. This is confirmed in the last chapter of Malachi. **Judah** was waiting for their **Messiah** to defeat The Roman Empire **by force**. Daniel 2 declares it plainly. Christ came **the first time** to give **forgiveness of sin** and bring **world peace**. What does The Gospel of The **Kingdom of God mean**? What did Jesus say?

The first revelation by Christ is that He fulfilled all of which *The Old Testament* prophesied. What actually was fulfilled was **the**

prophecy about Jesus (Luke 24:44). All the prophecies about Jesus in The Law and The Prophets have already happened and the **kingdom** was **at hand** or **ready** to take place in Christ's time. Wow! "**The kingdom**" according to Jesus was at hand!

Malachi 4:6 reveals if Judah does not respond to Elijah stating the children must return to The Fathers, God will strike the earth with a curse. What is this curse? In Hebrew the word is "cherem" and it is the only place "cherem" is used for the English word "curse." In Hebrew it means "taking a holy thing belonging to God and destroying it." How does God destroy the world? Malachi 4:1 answers the question in this way: "**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.**"

This is God's curse at Armageddon, when Jesus with angels and saints put an end to all wars once and for all.

Christ's first coming in the flesh was to bring world peace if only Judah and Rome would have accepted and believed Jesus was The Christ. They rejected Him so the curse went into effect.

Christ would only have come once and if The Jews would have accepted Jesus, then **the curse** would have already happened.

The last part of *The Gospel* of God's "**kingdom**" was for them to **repent** and believe *The Gospel*. Most think *the gospel* is God's **kingdom**, just like any government in the **world**. Too many think of God's **kingdom** as a **physical realm** and this is just what The Jews thought also. If that is **true**, then why would Christ say, "to **repent** and **believe the gospel**?" The **True Gospel** of God's

kingdom is explained that you should **repent** and **believe** or have **faith** in “*the gospel*.”

If the **kingdom** is physical, just as most world’s governments, what is there to **believe**? All Jesus had to do was take control of Rome and rule the world. You would require **no faith** or belief or no logical reason to repent. *The Gospel* or **Good News** of God’s **kingdom** is much, much more than a physical government. God reveals it to you as *The True Gospel* of God’s “**kingdom**.”

Kingdom Not By Observation

Jesus, in comparing what The Kingdom of God is like, said, “**Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? Or with what comparison shall we compare it**” (Mark 4:30)?

He then answers His own question. “**It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth. But when it is sown, it growth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it**” (Mark 4:31-32).

This certainly doesn’t sound like a **military** takeover but a **process** over a long period of time. Jesus is telling you rather than **military force** to establish God’s **kingdom**, The **Gospel** of The Kingdom evolves as a **growing entity**. That is why He used the example of a **mustard seed**. That is what **the millennium** is all about. God’s **kingdom** takes thousands of years to happen. Now just what is God’s **kingdom**? The Pharisees asked Jesus when **the kingdom** would come. It was spelled out very clearly when Christ said they should not expect Him to come by force. “**The Kingdom of God cometh not by observation: Neither shall**

they say, Lo here! Or Lo there! For, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you” (Luke 17:20-21).

This passage couldn't be any clearer. God's kingdom is an internal matter not an external physical government.

Human Nature

You need to ask yourself in what way is God's **kingdom** “in you.” Something must happen to a human being to make an individual **be part of The Kingdom of God.**

What is it about human beings that keeps them out of **the kingdom**? Always remember, this is not a physical matter like a physical government, but has to do with your **internal nature.**

Romans 6:23 reveals “**the wages of sin is death.**” Sin causes death because The Law tells you what sin is. When you are no longer human but “**a spirit,**” then **death is swallowed up in victory** (I Corinthians 15:53-56). It is your human body, which always looks out for itself and is constantly aware of survival, which causes you to sin. That is why Paul pleaded to God to deliver him from his own human body, which causes a person to sin and die (Romans 7:24-25). Clearly, Paul states Christ is the answer to show you how to stop sinning.

What is wrong with man's **human nature**? Solomon, after living his human existence, declares “**it is vanity**” [nothing]; “**all is vanity**” [all for nothing]. He is under inspiration and is defining what **human nature is.** “**I said in mine heart concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they [humanity] might see that they themselves are beasts**” (Ecclesiastes 3:18).

Solomon, having God's wisdom, related that the **sons of man** are **beasts**. As humans you are of the **animal kingdom**. Both animals and humans were created on the **sixth** day of **creation** (Genesis 1:24-31).

Christ was called The **Son of Man** just as Solomon said in Ecclesiastes 3:18. The Greek word for "man" is "*anthropos*" or "the animal kingdom." God knew long before the scientists understood that humans are from the animal kingdom. In fact, humans are **beasts** or very **carnal**. Humans devour flesh like any **animal** in order to survive. Beasts are **wild** like a lion, bear or leopard.

Humans are not born with the characteristics of a sheep (not being carnivorous). Humans fight for survival like any wild beast. That is why those who do not **repent** are called **carnal** (I Corinthians 3:1).

For God's **kingdom** to be "in you," you must no longer be **beasts**. That is why John, The Baptist (as Elijah) prepared **the way** for Christ. He was calling Judah to repentance.

Pagan Religions

Whether you look at the history of The Egyptians, Summerians, Aztecs, Babylonians or any other, you find similarities of **traditions** or **belief** being practiced. Most had priest-kings like Israel's Melchizedek or The Levitical Priesthood. The world has always believed in sacrifices of animals, children and adults. Sacrifices have always plagued most world's religious systems.

All nations sought to please their "little gods" by sacrifice. How did this come about? If various cultures **worshipped their own gods**, why did they all accept the practice of sacrifices as an ap-

peasement for sin? There must have been **a common origin**.

Sacrifice began with Cain and Abel. Cain murdered Abel and was sent wandering in **the wilderness** without God. From Cain the nations with their human imagination adopted "**poly gods**." Pagans believed in idols because they knew God's spirit created everything. Therefore, God's spirit being in everything, they worshipped the creation rather than the creator. However, as confused as the world became in their religious beliefs, the practice of sacrifice and other Godly truths were preserved. Many continued the belief of a world flood when one man was left with his family to preserve all future generations. Many other truths were intertwined in their **traditions** and **religions**. The Aztecs waited for Quatzequotel, a white man, to be their savior. Synergistic religious belief prevailed worldwide but mixed according to the culture and their reasonings along with their behavior or traditions. Many gods were created. That is why Romans 1:18 reveals pagans held the truth in "**unrighteousness**."

The True God

God despises idolatry or the worship of false gods who did not create anything as **The One True God** did. That is why so many scriptures relate to only "God Almighty created the universe." God hates idolatry because it misleads humanity from God's very purpose of making you Holy and perfect like Him so you can receive **the gift of salvation**.

Colossians 3:5 states, "**Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence and covetousness, which is idolatry.**"

To covet another "**god**" besides **the true** God who created the uni-

verse is idolatry. God hates idolatry because it misleads you from the real God and all His spiritual blessings (Ephesians 1:3).

In spite of a plethora of world religions which retained some of God's truth, idolatry only causes confusion and only brings a great deal of doubt about **the truth**. Humans always talk "**truth**" and end up with a religious system of lies and half-truths which ends in unrighteousness.

Since many religions believe in sacrifice, including human sacrifice, why did God allow any sacrifice for sin?

Hebrews 10:6 states God has **no pleasure** in offerings and sacrifices for sin. Why not? Hebrews 10:4 reveals animal sacrifices, like bulls and goats, cannot take away sin.

One can do all these human works or deeds just as the keeping of man-made days like Easter, Halloween and so on, or God's Holy Days depicting His **plan** which can never stop humans from sinning. God's purpose is to **destroy sin**. Hebrews 10:10 reveals only the sacrifice of Jesus as the **one body** which God prepared does take away sin. Animal sacrifices had a completely different purpose.

Hebrews 10:1 states the demands of The Law with the sacrifices are only **shadows** or a **type** of things to come. God clearly revealed in Hebrews 3:5 that The Law given to Moses was only a **testimony** or **witness** of what would be **revealed later**. What was revealed after?

Jesus came to bring **peace** to the **world** and remove all **sin**. Animal sacrifice merely was a reminder you are still a **sinner** without Christ. That is exactly what Hebrews 10:3 states. "**But in those**

sacrifices there is a **REMEMBRANCE AGAIN** made of sins every year.” That is the answer. Only Christ’s sacrifice removes sin.

All the animal sacrifices were to do “was reveal that humanity was like an animal or beast.” Even Christians can still be **carnal** or beastlike as those in Corinth (I Corinthians 3:1). When one is a babe in Christ they must grow in **spiritual knowledge**. However, they are still carnal and very much like beasts. Babes, in Christ, now repentant, are clean (no sin) but still clean animals like oxen or goats but not like Christ, a lamb.

Always understand that God accepted animal sacrifices only because they represented the nature or behavior of those Israelites who still sinned. It’s like any animal that resists following direction.

Peter stated in Acts 10 and 11 that God, through Christ’s sacrifices, no longer considers ANY human, Israelite or Gentile, as an **unclean animal**. Now God is allowing you to see all mankind act like animal, some “**clean**” and some “**unclean**.”

The “**unclean**” are the **wild** animals like a lion, bear or leopard. The “**clean**” are like helpful farm animals, oxen, goats and sheep.

Now God no longer considers the wild animals as unclean, but accepts **all people** who **fear Him** and worketh **righteousness** in their lives. They will be accepted by Him. God intends to **save the whole world**. That is why He sent Christ, to **save the world** (I John 4:14).

Remember, when Jesus was born of Mary, she was told Christ

came to bring **peace** to the world and save humanity from sin. Now you need to understand how **animals** are depicted.

Solomon's Conclusion

The preacher, Solomon, came to a conclusion concerning human life and what humanity really was. In *Ecclesiastes*, he said he experienced every human emotion and event. Solomon, as a king, was extremely wealthy and he denied nothing from enjoying a luxurious life.

He lived in folly (fun), riches, creativity, women, knowledge, construction and every human endeavor. What was his conclusion? **“I said in mine heart, concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they might see that they themselves are beasts”** (*Ecclesiastes* 3:18).

“Estate” in Hebrew means “condition,” “manifest” and “to separate and make known.” Solomon was meditating after living every human existence possible. In the end, God will show that everyone is only a **beast** or an **animal**.

Humanity always seeks self-preservation. Survival of the fittest. Humans will kill to preserve their lives. God is telling you, even if you give your life to God, but still offer your life as an animal that resists God or devours others to protect themselves, you are still considered **carnal**. That is, unless and until you strive to be like Christ.

Jesus came into the world to forgive and destroy sin and bring **peace** or love to the world. Not like animals that are stubborn and want to devour each other. Read all of *Ecclesiastes* for a true revelation of mankind.

The Gospel

The Gospel or **Good News** is more than The Kingdom of God. In Luke 12:31 Jesus said, “**But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.**” Christ related to all the things humans strive for in this life. Food, shelter, clothing, security, protection and so on and promised if you **truly seek God's kingdom** first in this life and not survival like an animal, all your needs will be supplied. Why?

“**Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom**” (Luke 12:32). In Ephesians 1, it explains it gives God pleasure to make you Holy and unblemished like He is. God deeply desires to give you His **kingdom** but only if you **seek His kingdom first** and not be like the animals who try to preserve their lives at all costs and never care about others.

God's **kingdom** is more than a **government**. It is a **government** of specific types of **beings**. Jesus plainly gives you the answer.

The Pharisees demanded to know of Christ when God's **kingdom** would come. They merely believed in a physical government restored to Israel by The **Messiah**, their Savior. Jesus gave the answer to what God's **kingdom** really was or what *The Gospel* consists of (Luke 17:20-21). “**The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! For, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you.**”

The Gospel or good news is not a physical government but a **spiritual government** which is dependent upon what its **citizens** become. God's **kingdom** has to do with a **change of human behavior**. Then and only then would God's **kingdom** come to this earth. God is making you in His image (Genesis 1:26). This is so

different from what so many preach.

When Jesus was born it started the **last days**. The **Fourth Gentile Government** will be governing on this earth and Christ will destroy it. How? By changing human nature and bringing **world peace**, which was the reason He was born. Paradise can only come when **everyone** knows how to behave and be able to live in a paradise.

With this change of behavior from being as unclean animals (lion, bear, leopard) and being transformed to a clean animal (ox, goat, sheep), finally you will become His **flock** or **sheep** (Matthew 25:31-34).

Who makes up the sheep family? Jesus does, by God's Holy Spirit. What is **the kingdom**? God's **kingdom** is a **spiritual government** whose inhabitants are exactly like Jesus! They will become "sons" and "daughters" just like Jesus. Christ is your sacrificial lamb and you are also able to become a lamb or be like Jesus. Then God will accept the sacrifice of your body (Romans 12:1) as God accepted Christ's body.

When you are like Jesus, then God is **well pleased** because it will be a time of Christ "in you" (Colossians 1:27). You are now in God's **kingdom**. Why? Because *The Gospel* is Jesus. What is *The Gospel*? "**The beginning of the *The Gospel of Jesus Christ, The Son of God.***" Jesus, The Christ, The Son of God is *The Gospel*.

A Family Government

When you become like Jesus in **the resurrection** you are given a spiritual body and you will be in the exact image of Christ who is in the exact **image** of God. God will then be "**all and in all.**"

Since there is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female. **“For ye are all ONE in Christ, Jesus”** (Galatians 3:28).

All of you are God's “sons” in Christ. God, indeed, had a wonderful plan for His creation. No one is any better than another. There has never been a better plan for you and yours. You become a family government of sons, like Christ. That is why God wants all, males and females to be His sons. You are to be just like Jesus, God's Son.

God's **kingdom** is not a place or a location but consists of spirit beings in the likeness of Jesus and God. **That is The Kingdom of God.** If “Christ be in you” then God's **kingdom** is **present**. That family is a continually growing family and Jesus is The Beginning of *The Gospel* (Mark 1:1). Only then can you be given **salvation** (live forever and ever) and have **paradise** and God's **rest**.

CHAPTER 16

THE FARMERS

God's "will" is based or determined upon God's "estate." Ephesians 1:10 states the dispensation of God's "estate" occurs "when the fullness of time is complete." God has predestined His plan to share all that He is.

The "**Tetragramaton**," "JHVH," denotes "**I am what I am.**" God reveals He will be whatever He chooses to be. God continually **creates** or purposely grows. God can be a multitude of dimensions. His **kingdom** has no end. He also chooses to share His eternal growth with His "like-kind" which He is creating in all Christians.

Physical And Spiritual

To prepare you to join God in His future growth of a New Heaven and a New Earth, He is showing you the steps you must take so you can be just like Him. Only when everyone is like God and Jesus will eternal "bliss" or "paradise" be guaranteed. Your **training environment** is the universe; and especially your own physical household which God created for you to learn and grow. This earth and the universe is physical. It is all subject to death or that which has a temporary existence. You must, therefore, choose between life and death in this physical dimension. The **physical** is a type of the **spiritual**.

When you learn to trust your Father in everything by **faith**, just

like His Son, Jesus, you will receive the **gift of eternal life** in a **spiritual dimension**. **Spiritual “growth”** never ends just as God continues growing and creating.

Our Physical Environment

In Genesis 1 and 2 God manifests three choices of environment for humanity to live in. The **world** or **earth** was created for all humans. Then God chose a land known as **Eden** or **pleasantness** in which to dwell. Finally, within The Land of Eden, God created a **wonderful garden** where the first Adam and Eve lived. This **garden** was designed to meet all of man's needs, including “**eternal life**” or God's “**rest**.” Man did not need to do any **work**. In **the garden** God completed all “**the work**.”

The Garden of Eden was God's “**rest**” or “**kingdom**.” Adam and Eve lived in “**paradise**.” Everything **humanity needed** was there and everything was **very good** (Genesis 1:31). Since no sin was committed, there was no **carnality**. There was nothing to cause harm to God or His **creation**. God was with Adam and Eve along with The Tree of Life. If they would have eaten the fruit of The Tree of Life, Adam and Eve would have continually grown to become like God. Adam and Eve in **the garden** were vegetarians since they were only given fruit and herbs to eat. No carnivorous animals were in **the garden** and God gave Adam and Eve all the security and protection they needed. There were four beautiful rivers flowing from **the garden** to the rest of Eden which watered the land with **its life-giving properties**. Eden was truly **the land of pleasantness**. The rest of the earth couldn't compare to it. The Garden was truly God's “**rest**” where God had done the **work** and The Land of Eden, as God's country, was truly **pleasant**.

The garden and **Eden** were a **physical type** of God's future

“rest” which is **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. When God makes **all things new** (Revelation 21 and 22), **Jerusalem** will be the center of **the spiritual garden**. The remaining of The New Earth will be **Eden** or **The Land of Pleasantness**. There will also be a wilderness which is a place of “**testing and growing**.” Those in this wilderness came out of The Lake of Fire and need to become like Christ so they can be allowed in New Jerusalem (Revelation 20 and Jude).

New Jerusalem, along with The Tree of Life, will have a great river going through The New Earth. Trees will be on each side of the river which shall have its leaves flow down the river to **heal** or cure the nations of the **whole earth**. Spiritual growth does not stop when this physical earth is replaced by The New Earth.

All nations which will be **saved** bring their **spiritual growth** or **glory** to God year by year. The opportunity for salvation continues. Even those who go through The Lake of Fire and now are in **darkness** will ultimately grow to be greater than any human born of man and woman. Jesus prophesied, “**Verily, I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John, the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he**” (Matthew 11:11).

New Jerusalem, which will be **the garden**, is presently in heaven and being prepared for **the saints** (John 14:1). In God’s **kingdom**, **the garden** and Eden, the **least** of individuals, will actually be **greater** than any human born of women. Who are the least? Those in this life who are **against** God and His **commandments** are to be the **least** in God’s **kingdom** (Matthew 5:19). Even those who are **least** in God’s **kingdom** will be **greater** than any existing human that has ever lived on earth. This is God’s **great plan**.

In **the kingdom** even those who burn in The Lake of Fire will finally **be great**. **Spiritual growth** continues even in God's **kingdom**. God continues the opportunity for salvation forever (II Peter 3:8-9). Those, burned in The Lake of Fire, purged of sin, are now spirit beings and in outer darkness. They must spiritually grow, just like Christians (Jude and Matthew 22). Everyone in God's **kingdom** will **forever** continue to grow to eventually be like **your God and Father**. **It will be at that time God will be "all and in all"** (I Corinthians 15:28). Since God is the "I AM" or will be whatever He chooses to be, Christians also will be growing to be like God, The Father because they have **faith** in Him. God will be "**All and In All!**"

Just as God receives **pleasure** in doing His "**will**" (Ephesians 1), you will be doing God's "**will**" just as Christ has done. All of God's creation will live in **eternal pleasure**.

Sin And The Wilderness

God's "**rest**" is The Garden of Eden. Once Adam and Eve sinned they were expelled from **the garden** and The Tree of Life. Now they had to work to survive and in the end they would die. However, they still lived in Eden, known as The Pleasant Land. They were not **in the wilderness**. They were not nomadic.

Cain and Abel, Adam and Eve's children, were known as "tillers of the soil" and "shepherds." They lived in Eden as farmers. All future generations (because Adam and Eve sinned) had to work to survive. God no longer supplied their needs as in **the garden**. **The garden** was where God was. So since that time, up to the present day, mankind has had to struggle to survive.

Once Cain murdered Abel, he was exiled to The Land of Nod and

as a result became a nomad. In John 8, Jesus states Satan was a murderer from the beginning. Cain killed Abel aided by Satan. Satan became Cain's "**father.**"

Satan is the god of this world (II Corinthians 4:4). Nod was a **land of wandering** or **wilderness** where Satan was the deceiver. This was Satan's world. The wilderness is "**the world**" under Satan's jurisdiction. Under Satan's deception, everyone is lost from God and is in confusion. That is why Christ was in **the wilderness battling Satan for forty days. Satan was there as "the god of this world"** in "**the wilderness**" (Luke 4:1-4).

To know "**truth,**" mankind must be in God's land or **Eden**. It is **the land of pleasantness** because those dwelling "in Christ" understand and see "**the truth.**" They know "what's what." Those in **the wilderness** do not know why they were created human or know the purpose of life to the extent they understand what they should be doing.

They exist just "to exist." Sin is the cause of being in **the wilderness** or without God. In The New Earth, Satan will also be growing in the wilderness. But, there will be a great deal of weeping and wailing (Matthew 22:13-14).

God's House

In II Timothy 2:19-21, Paul reveals that in **God's** (Jude 13) **house** there are many vessels, some to honor and some to dishonor. There is a mixture of **good** and **evil**, but in God's **kingdom** everyone will have repented and will be healed. Even those in The Lake of Fire. Read *The White Throne Judgment*.

Paul told Timothy The Lord knows **those** who belong to Him.

God's house has those who He has sealed as **His children** and He knows those who are not His (II Timothy 2:19). Satan has tossed tares into God's **house**. Does God have a house and if He does, what kind?

The Garden of Eden as New Jerusalem in God's New Heaven and Earth is where God does the **work**. Everything for **life** is provided by God for a life in **paradise**. Humanity does none of the work but must keep it in good order as God created. This **house** or **mansion** is where **those sealed** by God, as **saints**, live and serve God.

Those who have grown **spiritually** but have not matured to the stature of Christ must still work to survive. Those growing Christians have entered God's **rest** and the only work they will have is to work on having absolute **faith** in God and be like Jesus. These Christians are in Eden, a **pleasant land** and are not **lost** as **those in the wilderness**.

This **Land of Eden** is like a farm or ranch. They grow produce and have farm animals just like Cain and Abel did in the original Eden. There are no wild beasts there. Those who come out of The Lake of Fire and **repent** are goats and need to become sheep while in the wilderness. Those in God's "**rest**" are protected as long as they have **faith** in God's "**house**" or "**ranch**" or "**garden**."

The Beast

Solomon summarized **the state of mankind** is nothing more than living as a **beast**. All humans are born with the desire of self-survival. To keep safe you will steal, lie or injure others. Just as any carnivore, you can become violent to maintain your security and safety. Those who are completely carnal are acting as "**beasts**."

God uses different animals to designate a particular human behavior as to a Christian's **spiritual growth**. To bring this point out further, you may have seen some reporters take pictures of singers, movie or TV stars who have a menacing look on their faces and gather in droves to pounce on their prey.

Peter states that God, no longer, regards any difference between clean and unclean animals (Acts 10 and 11). In fact, every type of creature and animal was included in **the vision** Peter had. This means even humans who behave like wild animals, lions, leopards or bears are acceptable to God.

As long as any human **fears** God and seeks **righteousness** God will accept that person (Acts 10:35). Animals, according to their differing behavior, depict mankind's nature. There are three levels of animal behavior:

- 1 **Wild beasts** – Carnivores.
- 2 **Unclean animals** – Includes carnivores and dangerous animals, poisonous snakes, rabbits, squirrels, mice and rats.
- 3 **Clean animals** – Basically, edible farm and ranch animals like oxen, goats or sheep. They are animals who are trainable and are helpful to humanity.

The animal must determine acceptability to God. Christ specifies you must be as "**a lamb**" to be able to receive **eternal life in the kingdom** (Matthew 25:32). Just as Jesus was a slain lamb, you, likewise, must become like a lamb.

All other animal behavior will not be acceptable to God. Depend-

ing upon your spiritual growth as a wild beast, lion, bear, leopard or any unclean animal as a lobster, frog, etc. to a clean animal as an ox or goat **will not** receive the opportunity for salvation until God's kingdom. Even clean animals such as an ox or goat will not qualify.

By being a **lamb** following Christ, The Shepherd, you will receive **eternal life** in the resurrection. The beast or completely carnivorous animals, are regarded to be worthy only of His **wrath**. The Mark of The Beast with its number 666 is the number of a man or beast-like to survive.

The three sixes represent humans with the nature of wild animals such as a lion, bear or leopard. In Gentile history these animals with their human names were depicted as Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, Cyrus of Media-Persia and The Greco-Macedonians led by Alexander, The Great. All their actions are military and their armies were violent just like wild animals. This is known as The **Mark of The Beast**. God will vent out His **wrath** upon those individuals who have this behavior. Next are unclean animals such as snakes, scorpions and other such animals. Finally, clean animals may not be as voracious by not causing much havoc, are therefore, not as injurious to man much like the oxen, goats or sheep. Although remember, these clean animals can still hurt others when they are stubborn. Only people with **lamb-like natures will be saved** in the resurrection. The others will have their opportunity in God's **kingdom** but cannot enter New Jerusalem (Revelation 22:15).

God's Protection

God refers to three different environments on this earth where humanity can dwell. Two of these areas are protected by God while

the third is Satan's realm. So The Garden of Eden and The Land of Eden are protected, however **the wilderness** (the world), is where **Satan is god of that domain** and rules those in it, but only until God's **kingdom**.

The Garden of Eden will only have herbs and fruit trees for mankind's menu. No wild animals. God will do **the work**. The Land of Eden or **the pleasant land** is God's "rest" with His protection **where man does the work** as on a farm or ranch. This is The True Sabbath's Rest where God does the work.

This **present world** in which you live is called **the wilderness** because Satan is its "god." It is full of wild animals like the lion, bear or leopard and they are ready to devour. It goes without saying, there are too many places in this world "rife" with violence. At present, **the true garden** or paradise is not available until The New Heaven and New Earth (New Jerusalem) is **prepared in heaven** by God and Christ (John 14:1). **Eden** or **the ranch** is where Christians live in God's **household**. Basically, farm animals such as the ox, goat or sheep will be allowed. Spiritual growth takes place on this ranch. Everyone does good works. Humans who are "**converted**" Christians, **rest** in Christ.

They are to be like sheep. They will also have God's protection from **the wilderness of the world around them**. As Christ said, "**We are in God's rest or household**." Christians are to continue growing spiritually from being an ox to a goat and finally a sheep. You need to ask yourself exactly how **spiritual growth continues** or how it stops growing.

The Wilderness

Surprisingly, in The New Heaven and Earth there will be "a wil-

derness.” This “wilderness” will be the farthest location from New Jerusalem and God’s “**glory.**” In fact, this wilderness is in complete darkness as opposed to the brightness of God’s “**glory**” (Jude).

This future wilderness, as darkness, is depicted in Jude 13. Speaking of those who go into The Lake of Fire (Jude 23) and as **spirit beings** are as wandering stars (wandering spirits), to whom is **reserved** “the blackness of darkness.” “Forever” in Greek means “age-lasting” or “until they become like Christ.” This is their opportunity. Matthew 22:13 reveals the same end for those thrown out of The Wedding Feast.

As the river of waters with the healing leaves flow to the entire New Earth, these “wandering stars” (spirits) will begin to drink its **therapeutic waters** to be able to grow **spiritually**, to eventually reach the stature of Christ.

They will be “**in torment**” during this **growing period**. Just as Israel had to wander in the wilderness for forty years and as Christ did in **the wilderness** for forty days, all these **spirits** also must be tried and tested in “their” forty-year-trial period.

The word “**torment**” in Greek is “phobus” or “a phobia.” They will be wailing and gnashing their teeth for having blown their previous opportunity to have a greater **reward** with access to God and Christ in New Jerusalem (Revelation 21:6-8, 27). The ultimate promise Christ gave is that even the least in **God’s kingdom** or **family** will be **greater** than any born human in this present life (Matthew 11:11).

In God’s **family kingdom** of sons, like Christ, all will continually grow spiritually “**eternally.**” Then in **the wilderness** when Satan

and his angels (spirit beings known as demons) come out of the fire, they must, also become as sheep to be able to live in **God's kingdom**. Then, and only then, will God be "**all and in all.**"

CHAPTER 17

GOD'S EARTHLY HOUSES

King David wanted to build God “a house.” Here was God’s reply, “Go and tell my servant David, Thus saith the Lord, Shall thou build me an house for me to dwell in” (II Samuel 7:5)? God did dwell at times in earthly houses. Up to that point God had walked in a tent or a tabernacle (II Samuel 7:6).

God who is “**The I AM**” or “**existing one**” will be whatever He wants to be. The “**Tetragramaton**,” “**JHVH**,” is “the one who dwells where He chooses to **dwell**.” Presently, God’s **house** is in heaven with Jesus sitting next to Him at His right hand. During this time, Jesus is building a mansion for His people, Christians, to dwell in (John 14).

Different Earthly Houses

God only dwells on earth when there is no sin (Isaiah 59:1-2). Once sin enters “**a place**” then God will not listen to them, let alone live with the sinners. When God created **the heaven and earth**, He also decided to dwell in The Garden of Eden. In this **garden** was where God **rested** from all His work on **the seventh day**.

Outside of The Garden was **The Land of Pleasantness** or Eden. This Land of Eden was still pleasant because God was there but The Tree of Life was not there. It was then “**man**” began to do

the work to be able to survive. Cain became a farmer and Abel became a shepherd.

In the beginning, The Garden of Eden was where God dwelt and The Tree of Life was there, but God Himself, only, did all the work. This was God's first earthly house. God did the work for Christians because He is the greatest servant. This was God's **kingdom**. In God's **kingdom** and **rest**, He, again, will do **all the work**. Adam and Eve only had to dress and keep **the garden** as God created it. All God wanted of Adam and Eve was "to keep" and not "to ruin" His **house**. Since God dwelt there, it was God's **house** or **temple**. It is where He chose to dwell since there was no sin.

God was **The Creator, The Supplier, The Protector** and **The Life-giver**. Until Adam and Eve sinned, God was "all and in all."

Adam and Eve were in God's **house** and He supplied all Adam and Eve's **needs**. Once Adam and Eve sinned they could not dwell in God's **house** and were told to leave. Adam and Eve proved they had no right to The Tree of Life or His **kingdom** (Romans 5:12-15).

God's Second Earthly House

God only dwelt with a select group of people, His Prophets, until Israel became a nation under the administration of Moses.

When Israel sinned at Mount Sinai by worshipping the golden calf, God was ready to destroy Israel and build a new people, a new nation from The Tribe of The Levites. God said He would not dwell with Israel any longer, but was still willing to keep them

as His people, but they were only to be led by an angel or messenger (Exodus 23). God approved this **added covenant** – *The Old Covenant*, which only applied to Israel because they had “**a wrong heart.**” It was as a schoolmaster making them do a lot of homework until they had learned to have “**a right heart.**” Read Deuteronomy 5.

From that time God would only dwell outside of Israel’s camp in **the tabernacle** which was **God’s second earthly house**. Moses was to be **the sole contact** between God and Israel. They could not be in God’s **rest** but had to be in **the wilderness** and take care of themselves.

Israel left Sinai and went into **the wilderness** to be tried and tested to exercise **faith**. But remember Joshua and Caleb were the only ones who had **faith**. But since Israel didn’t have Joshua and Caleb’s faith, God “tried” them for forty years, but they kept murmuring and didn’t put their trust in God (Acts 7). God allowed or tested them on ten different occasions, to trust Him, and each time they would not.

When all The Israelites had died from that generation, then Joshua brought **the new generation** into “**the promised land.**”

In King David’s day, the king wanted to build a **temple** or **house** for God, so He could be with His people – Israel. God told David that he, David, was **a bloody man of war** and would not be allowed to build God’s **house**.

Later David’s son Solomon built God’s house. Again, God, as “**The I AM,**” dwells only where He chooses to dwell. God’s **new house, the temple**, was where God would dwell from that time forward until Nebuchadnezzar captured Jerusalem and de-

stroyed **the temple**. This was God's **second earthly house**, but God would only be there from time to time when God's "**glory**" would be present. God still would not dwell with Israel but talked to them through Solomon and The Levites. Solomon asked God for **wisdom** to rule the people and God gave Solomon "**the wisdom**" he asked for. This earthly house was a **temple** where God would dwell from time to time. This lasted until Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon destroyed **the temple** in 586 B.C. and brought Judah to Babylon to be in captivity for seventy years. This **temple**, as **the tabernacle**, was to be an exact duplicate of God's **temple** in heaven where God does dwell.

God's Decree

When The Jews went into captivity in Babylon, Daniel, God's Prophet, earnestly prayed for his people to be forgiven of their sins and return them to Jerusalem to rebuild **the temple** so God could be with them again.

What did Daniel learn? Gabriel, God's angel, came to Daniel and told him he was greatly beloved because he asked for forgiveness for his people. This is what the MESSENGER said. "**Seventy weeks**" are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the TRANSGRESSION (Daniel 9:24). In the Hebrew "seventy weeks" is rendered "seventy years." Exactly seventy years from the beginning of the captivity God forgave the sins of The Jews. It was at that time King Cyrus of The Media-Persian Empire sent out a decree to restore God's **temple**. God would once again dwell with Judah from time to time in His "**glory**."

The Books of Ezra and Nehemiah cover the struggle The Jews had. It wasn't until **the second decree** by Artaxerxes, The King of Media-Persia, when **the temple** and walls were being completed. In

The Bible this period was known as TROUBLOUS TIMES (Daniel 9:25). This lasted all the way through the time of The Maccabees (Zealots), and then Herod finished **the temple**. That **temple** was finally completed by Herod, The Great (in Christ's day) which had taken **forty-six years** (John 2:20). During this time Jesus was told how beautiful **the temple** was. Then Christ made a tremendous prophetic statement: "**Destroy this TEMPLE, and in three days I will raise it up**" (John 2:19).

Jesus was telling them that **the temple** which was built by Herod would be destroyed. He told them the **spiritual answer** was His own body would be destroyed and then He would be raised up in three days (John 2:21).

Jesus was prophesying that God was about to change His **dwelling place** to a **spiritual temple** and no longer would there be a physical one (temple) where they could seek God. In 70 A.D. Herod's Temple was destroyed and God was no longer there. This is the reason Jesus said to the Samaritan woman that a day would come when God would no longer be worshipped in Samaria or Jerusalem (John 4:21). Christ said their worship in **the temple would cease** and God from that time forward only wanted to be WORSHIPPED SPIRITUALLY (John 4:23-24). **This was a monumental change of worship.**

A Spiritual Temple

Jesus prophesied to the Samaritan woman that God would no longer DWELL in an EARTHLY HOUSE but a **spiritual one**. It was at this time God was going to change His requirements for individuals to be called His PEOPLE.

NO LONGER would PHYSICAL ELEMENTS of the earth as *The*

Old Covenant, or any human religious ideas, be acceptable to God when individuals wanted to worship Him. When physical worship stopped in Jerusalem, man's effort to please God had ceased. Christianity is **NOT A RELIGION of "do's and don'ts"** to be able to worship The TRUE GOD. Worshipping God in Jerusalem ceased when Titus destroyed **the temple** in 70 A.D. God ended *The Old Covenant* with Moses by allowing Titus to destroy **temple worship**. Before the destruction of **the temple** Paul warned in Hebrews 8:13 that *The Old Covenant* was vanishing and would disappear.

From 74 A.D., with the destruction of Masada, The Jews were rejected as God's people. Now God was converting a people **more worthy** than Israel had been. This concluded "**the seventy weeks prophecy**" of 490 years in Daniel 9.

If no temple existed, did God change His dwelling place? There would be no more worshipping God as a religion with "**worldly elements**" or "**deeds**" but a SPIRITUAL TEMPLE was needed where God would dwell. Hebrews 3 tells that Christians who have put their complete faith in God and Christ will have God dwelling in their very own body or temple. Christianity was never intended to be A RELIGION but A WAY OF LIVING so GOD WOULD DWELL THERE. EARTHLY TEMPLES had VANISHED and would not again appear until **the millennium**.

God's Will

The Bible is a written **WILL** or **TESTAMENT** where God intends to show His **plan** so everyone can be LIKE HIM which is HOLY and PERFECT (Genesis 1:26).

The Old Covenant did not cease when Jesus was human. *The*

Old and New Testament is ONE continuing STORY with ONE THEME. The last *Old Testament* PROPHET, Malachi, continues by announcing the next Prophet to Israel which was ELIJAH or John, The Baptist. The story continues with the oldest *Gospel of Mark*, which introduces John, The Baptist.

Malachi 3:1 declares: “**Behold, I will send my messenger [John], and he shall prepare the way before me [Christ]: and the Lord, whom ye seek [Messiah], shall suddenly come to his TEMPLE, even the messenger of the COVENANT, whom ye DELIGHT in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts.**” Malachi is revealing Christ’s commission from God. Jesus comes to God’s house, the temple. When Christ came, He brought *The New Covenant*. What does Christ do? “**But who may ABIDE the day of His coming? And who shall STAND when He appeareth? For He is like a REFINER’S FIRE, and like a FULLER’S SOPE**” (Malachi 3:2).

Jesus, when He came to **the temple**, was to purify it and make it clean without any blemish. Read the rest of Malachi 3 where Jesus will purge **the temple** by making it **righteous**. At the end of His purging He will render **judgment**, so no longer will God’s **house** be a **temple for business** which defrauds the poor and, in part, keeps them poor.

Malachi clearly prophesies the outcome of Herod’s Temple as accomplished by Christ. The **temple** gives the answer to the exact time *The Old Covenant* under Moses ceases and *The New Covenant* **begins**.

CHAPTER 18

GOD'S SPIRITUAL HOUSE

Jesus started His earthly ministry when He was baptized at THIRTY years of age (Luke 3:23). This was exactly the age a Levite started to serve in The Priesthood (Numbers 4:1-3). In Malachi 3:1 Jesus would suddenly come to His “temple” or His Father’s “house” to MAKE IT RIGHTEOUS (Malachi 3:3).

Forty Years

About one week before Christ approached His crucifixion, He entered **the temple** that last Passover and said the following: **“My house shall be called of ALL NATIONS the HOUSE OF PRAYER, but you have made it a DEN OF THIEVES”** (Mark 11:17). Malachi said, **“I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: And he shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse”** (Malachi 4:5-6). If John, The Baptist as Elijah would not turn the hearts of the children to the fathers (Noah, Abraham, etc.), God would bring a **CURSE UPON THE EARTH.**

God cursed the earth as Jesus prophesied in Matthew 23 because of the scribes' and the Priest's corruption because they made a business in **the temple**. This is known as The Time of Sorrows which culminates in Armageddon when Christ **returns**.

After Jesus was baptized God said, “**This is my BELOVED son in whom I am well pleased**” (Mark 1:11). “**And, immediately, The Spirit [of God] drives Him [Jesus] into THE WILDERNESS. And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts.**”

Christ was in temptation by Satan and WILD BEASTS for the complete 40 days (Mark 1:12-13). Just as Israel had to go to be “**tried**” by God in the WILDERNESS for 40 years, Jesus was “**tested**” the same way. Remember, each day is a year in prophecy (II Peter 3).

The test Christ went through was to prove He was **the temple**, God’s Son, by living every Word of God (Matthew 4:3-4). This is why Satan asked, “**...if you be the son of God.**” God said, after Christ’s baptism, that He was The Son of God.

Christ proved He was God’s Son by beating Satan in THE WILDERNESS. Now from age 30, starting His **ministry** as a Levite, Christ cleansed His Father’s **house, the temple on earth**, by removing the MONEY CHANGERS.

After Jesus was crucified God gave Judah 40 years to prove themselves just as in **the wilderness**. Like Israel and all their generation who failed in **the wilderness**, The Jews had **the temple** destroyed in 70 A.D.

Christ started His **ministry** at age 30 and if you add 40 years you have 70 years or 70 A.D. when **the temple** was destroyed by Titus. Since Jesus was crucified at 33 years of age which happened in 30 A.D. **the temple** was no longer there 40 years later in 70 A.D.

The Jews, as a nation, held out in Masada to the point they took

their very lives in 74 A.D. This completed **the 490 year prophecy** in Daniel 9. The curse was now upon the earth till **the second coming of The Messiah.**

Our New House

The first part of “**the Malachi curse**” was the destruction of **the temple.** Here is Christ’s indictment: “**And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things [temple buildings]? There shall not be left here ONE STONE upon another that shall not be THROWN DOWN**” (Matthew 24:1-2).

Then after the destruction of **the temple,** which was the first curse, Christ lists all of the sorrow to follow until His “**coming**” to **save** mankind from self-destruction (Matthew 24:21-22).

In 70 A.D. with **the temple** gone, The Law of Moses could no longer be kept in its entirety which was required by The Law (James 2:10). This ended *The Old Covenant.* The Greek word for “wax old” *is* defined as “OLD AGE” or “ready to die” in Hebrews 8:13.

The reason God disannulled this **commandment** was because it was WEAK and because of mankind’s *all too human* “**flesh.**” **Human nature being what it is could never and will never be able to keep The Law** (Hebrews 7:18). God was directly VOIDING *The Old Covenant* which had been added to The Law. The keeping of The Law could make nothing PERFECT as God’s “**testament**” demanded (Ephesians 1:4). *The Old Covenant* could never give “**salvation.**”

God no longer dwelt in **the temple** as His “**house**” after 70 years, so He eventually could be able to turn the hearts of the children

to the fathers. Paul then announced “**a new way**” which could make humans **holy and unblemished**. “**For the Law made nothing PERFECT, but the bringing in of a BETTER hope did, by the which we DRAW near unto God**” (Hebrews 7:19). God was about to dwell with His “**spirit**” of His “**Glory**” in a different way. What was this NEW HOUSE or **temple**?

God's New Temple

The Apostle Paul reveals the change of dwelling for God's **new house**. Read Hebrews 3:1-19. Paul said Jesus, as The Head Apostle, sent by God, should be followed as **the profession** or as their **way of life**.

Paul describes Moses was FAITHFUL as a “**testimony**” in his **house** (*Old Covenant* and **temple**). The word “**martyr**” in Greek means “**a witness in better things to come**” (*New Covenant*).

Earthly houses or **temples** are built by humans but He who BUILDS ALL THINGS IS GOD. God is now about to build His own **house** or **temple** in which to dwell (Hebrews 3:4).

God will dwell in this **new temple** which He, alone, can only build. What is this **new temple**? “**But Christ as a son over his own house; WHOSE HOUSE ARE WE, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end**” (Hebrews 3:6).

God's NEW HOUSE is centered in each Christian. God, by His Holy Spirit, now LIVES in each Christian instead of an **earthly house**. Since ONLY God is GOOD and **Holy** there is only one way any human can be HOLY. That way is by having Christ “in you” (Colossians 1:27). But just how can Christ dwell “**in you**?”

The rest of Hebrews 3 manifests it is God's Holy Spirit by which God or Christ can dwell "**in you.**" You can only be "**holy**" by what is "**holy**" "**in you.**" That is **God** "**in you.**" Paul warns, as you live in this WILDERNESS (the world which is cursed), as Israel went through **the wilderness**, you should remain FAITHFUL to the GUIDANCE of God's Holy Spirit "in you" to the very end. If you do, you then are in **God's REST** (Hebrews 4).

If you are a true Christian, God dwells "in you" as His **new house**. What does this "**house**" do? Paul answers the question. "**Know ye not that ye are the TEMPLE of GOD, and that the Spirit of God DWELLETH in you**" (I Corinthians 3:16-17). God's "**new house**" or "**TEMPLE**" where God dwells in each Christian can and will make you eventually **perfect** because God is Holy. God now DWELLS SPIRITUALLY "**in you**" as His **new house** or **temple**. God's **new house** is a SPIRITUAL HOUSE which makes Christians Holy like The Creator who made you.

A Change Of Worship

When God changes His House of Worship or **temple**, He also is changing conditions of His "will" with a New Contract, which is a *New Covenant*.

The Old Covenant was based upon MAN'S EFFORTS or deeds. Since Israel had a wrong heart and lacked **faith** in God, they were told exactly what is **right** and **wrong** by their own ability. This is known as a RELIGION or following rules, whether by God or human imagination. Without God it is "PAGAN." Paganism is a "**human religious system**" of human ideas of worship of a **false god**.

A **Godly pure religion** is a method of worshipping God with no

human effort. God wants you to be **Holy** and **perfect**. To be **Holy** and **perfect** has to do with how someone lives their life (James 1:27). It is definitely not a series of religious deeds or activities. Doing religious deeds or works does not and cannot change human nature.

In Galatians 4:3 Paul said, “**Even so we, when we were children [new in Christ], were in BONDAGE under the ELEMENTS of the world.**”

The Greek for “ELEMENT” is “*stoicheion*” meaning “a ROW” or “go in a row.” It refers to “any worldly system of religion that one does which makes a human do something over and over again as in a ROW.” This human type of religion, done by mankind, continually repeats itself. It never changes human nature doing repetitive rituals over and over.

With the destruction of **the temple**, following a religious system of human works which ceased, it had to be replaced by a far BETTER SYSTEM. The new system is not based on human effort, but spiritually, by **God “dwelling in you,”** by His Holy Spirit which is Christ “in you” (Colossians 1:27).

God's **temple**, where God dwells, is now a SPIRITUAL TEMPLE where henceforth, as Christians, God wants you to only worship Him **spiritually** (John 4).

CHAPTER 19

SEVENTY TIMES SEVEN

God uses the number 70 as “a time of forgiveness for sins.” In fact, God multiplies 70 times 7 or 490 years to forgive transgressions. Why does God allot the number 7 and 70 as a number for you to know He will forgive sin?

God Is Merciful

Following *The Bible* “**story**” or “**theme**” throughout *The Bible*, God reveals His patience and mercy with all mankind. You now have an entire new act of God’s “**forgiveness**” written in *The New Testament* or *The New Covenant* in God’s “will.”

The temple on earth where God dwelt was destroyed in 70 A.D. Now God **no longer** wants to be worshipped by human works but “**spiritually**.” At this point, God begins to change each Christian by you becoming like Christ, **Holy** and **sinless**. **Each Christian is now God’s Spiritual Temple where He dwells**. As long as you remain FAITHFUL to God and His Son, Jesus, you are SINLESS because of Christ’s sacrifice (I John 1:7 and I John 4:18).

Christians Are Sinless In Christ

How do you, as a Christian, remain **sinless**? The Apostle John answers the question. “**And this is his Commandment, That we should believe on the name of His son Jesus Christ, AND LOVE ONE ANOTHER, as he gave us commandment**” (I John 3:23).

As long as you believe and have FAITH in Christ and LOVE ONE ANOTHER, you are blameless and WITHOUT SIN.

Now to answer the question about how many times you are to FORGIVE YOUR BROTHER who might transgress against you and yet, you still forgive HIM. God tells you to forgive others who transgress against you 70 x 7. Can you do the same?

Surprisingly, the first act of forgiveness was started by a pagan. When Cain murdered his brother Abel, God had Cain leave The Land of Eden. Cain went into The Land of Nod or **the wilderness** to be on his own. Over the years, as Cain's progeny grew, you encounter one of his great, great-grandchildren named Lamech. He had been attacked by two men and he killed them. Here is what Lamech told his two wives: **"Hearken unto my speech; for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. If Cain shall be avenged SEVENFOLD [times], truly Lamech SEVENTY and SEVENFOLD [times]"** (Genesis 4:23-24).

Cain was to be forgiven seven times seven or 49 years. The 50th year is Jubilee when all debts are forgiven. Lamech claimed he should be forgiven seventy times seven or 490 years. Already **mercy was to be claimed** for Cain and Lamech. Does forgiveness of seven times seven and 70 times 7 apply for you today?

Jesus Answers

Christ speaks to His Disciples in Matthew 18:14-22. **"Even so it is not the "will" of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish."** Always keep in mind, God's "will" is to **save** everyone once they **repent**. Jesus relates how to handle transgressions between **church members**. If a brother transgresses against another, the dispute should be handled pri-

vately. No one should know about it. If it is settled between them, then the dispute is forgotten and they have each gained a brother. On the other hand, should the disagreement continue, then two or three other church members of good honor are to be witnesses during the discussion. If it's not settled after this encounter, there is nothing left to do but the one who transgressed should be treated as a heathen or put out of the church until he repents.

Now Jesus makes a remarkable statement. **“Again, I say unto you, that if two [witnesses] of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven (Matthew 18:19).**

Many believe, **erroneously**, however, this has to do with forgiveness of sin. But realize the subject is to **settle disputes between brothers. Only God and Christ can forgive sin!**

Then Peter asks a vital and important question. Should **the church**, not just **the ministers**, but any two or three witnesses settle the dispute? What Peter is asking is how many times should you be willing to forgive a transgression between one brother and another brother? How long do you keep listening to disputes between brothers before “enough is enough?” Remember, the issue is settling differences between church brethren and **not** the forgiveness of sin. Only Christ's blood does that when a Christian repents. The issue is keeping all the brethren united as a family. So Jesus replies to Peter's question. **“Jesus saith unto him. I say not unto thee, Until seven times, but until seventy times seven.”**

This can't be any clearer for Christians to understand or for anyone reading this to comprehend. Forgiving only seven times is not enough. Christians must forgive seven times seventy. (7 x 70

is 490 times or in duality 490 years).

As long as a brother asks **forgiveness** or **repents**, you as a Christian must forgive him not only 7 times (or 7 years) but 70 times 7 or 490 times (or 490 years).

Cain, himself, was forgiven seven times and then Lamech knew he would be forgiven 70 x 7. Jesus validated the forgiveness (70 x 7). This is God's Word (Matthew 18:22).

Mystery Of Number Seven

God will grant **grace** "**forever**" when you repent. God has a mathematical formula which proves it. From the beginning God rested on the 7th day. Everything was very good or perfect on the seventh day (Genesis 1:31). The number 7 denotes perfection when everything is **very good**.

There is **no sin**. No sin was allowed in **paradise** (or God's **rest**), nor will it be allowed when Christ returns. Remember, God said His **kingdom** was very good (Genesis 1:31). No sin can be in or even be able to enter God's **kingdom**. The number "7" is imperative for being sinless **to be allowed in God's rest or kingdom family**. **This is a family matter**. God's **rest**, The 7th Day, is perfect and very good. It is God's sabbath and not man's.

Salvation is a **gift of grace** granted to those who become sinless or perfect like God, The Father (Matthew 5:48). To enter **God's seventh day rest you must be faithful to the end and to be able to enter God's rest** (Hebrews 4:9).

The number 'seven' denotes God's **rest** when everyone who repents will enter, whether forgiven 7 times or 7 times 7. Why is 7

times 7 or 70 times 70 so significant? It all has to do with Christ, The Judge at The White Throne Judgment.

The Jubilee

The Jubilee, one of God's Holy days, occurred every 50th year or after 7 times 7 (Leviticus 25). Forty nine years have elapsed and what does God decree the fiftieth year? **Forgiveness of all debts.** If all debts are forgiven on the 50th year and you are to forgive 7 times 7 or even up to 70 times 7, then, as long as the other person repents, they are to be forgiven by God through Christ. You, then, become sinless and can enter God's Seventh Day Rest or be in God's **family kingdom**, because in His **kingdom** there can be no sin. Sin is destroyed by God through His Son, Jesus, The Christ. You, along with all Christians, have a wonderful Father.

You are to continue forgiving transgressions right up to The Jubilee when God will release all your debts by His Son, Jesus. This is The Real Sabbath Rest in God's **kingdom**. It will happen when everyone confesses and all is forgiven. This is at The Time of The New Heaven and New Earth revealed in Revelation 21 and 22. The number 7 reveals **God's Kingdom Rest**. But what is most significant is forgiving 7 times or 7 times 7 or 70 times 7 which brings you to The Jubilee where God forgives everyone.

Eternal Forgiveness

God never stops forgiveness and that is why after 7 times 7 or even 7 times 70 or 490 years, God is merciful and will always forgive as long as one REPENTS.

That is why Christ told His Apostles whoever they forgive, they themselves will be forgiven in heaven. It isn't that Jesus told His

Apostles they were forgiving sin, but anyone who **repents** will be forgiven. All will be forgiven their sins as long as they **RE-PENT** and believe in **FAITH** that God is **ALWAYS MERCIFUL** and **FORGIVING** as long as they ask for forgiveness.

The number 7 denotes God's **REST** or **kingdom** where no sin dwells. Where no sin exists, God dwells and makes His **ABODE** or **HOUSE** there.

Whether one asks forgiveness when transgressing 7 times, they are forgiven. Even if they repent 70 times 7 or 490 years, they are forgiven.

In each case the 50th year is a Jubilee or Jubilee Year and God forgives **ALL DEBTS** and everyone. Then they can receive their **INHERITANCE OF ETERNAL LIFE**. Truly, a **GIFT of GRACE** from the **MERCIFUL ONE**, God and His Son. Whether after 7 x 7 or 49 years, The 50th Year ushers in release of **ALL DEBTS** or 490 years of forgiveness, when the **TEN JUBILEES' DEBTS ARE FORGIVEN**.

That is why Jesus said **ALL MANNER** of **SIN** shall be forgiven (Matthew 12:31). Only "the rejection" of God's Holy Spirit is not forgiven. Read the book *The White Throne Judgment* for a complete answer.

GOD ALWAYS FORGIVES THE REPENTANT. It is Christ's job to **HEAL** or restore that individual (Matthew 13:15). This is the **CARDINAL PRINCIPLE** God and Christ **DECLARE TO MANKIND**. God's "**will**" is **TO SAVE EVERYONE** (I Timothy 2:4). "**The Lord is not slack concerning his PROMISE, as SOME MEN count slackness; but is LONG SUFFERING to US-WARD, BUT THAT ALL SHOULD COME TO REPEN-**

TANCE” (II Peter 3:8-9). Can’t be any clearer.

The word “long suffering” in the Greek is “*comotes*” meaning “FORBEARING PATIENTLY.” Just as parents teach a baby to speak, walk, eat or dress themselves – it takes years. Your Father and His Son, Jesus never gives up until God’s “will” is achieved. The number 7 represents God’s **rest** and His sinless **kingdom** where everyone will be IN PARADISE. Paradise can only occur where there is NO SIN. God’s **rest** is about to take place in *The New Testament*. God’s **testament** or “**WILL**” continues with the establishment of *The New Covenant* when God changes His dwelling place or **temple** to a SPIRITUAL TEMPLE where RIGHTEOUSNESS prevails.

God’s **story**, the theme of *The Bible*, continues with Jesus, The Christ. The Mediator of GOD’S “**WILL**” where sin is forgiven and PEACE is established in The New Heaven and New Earth. It is when God “**rests**” or His 7th Day where God will do the “**WORK.**”

The Old Covenant is weak because of the FLESH and Jesus, in the LAST DAYS, introduces *The New Covenant* from God’s “**will**” as stated in *The New Testament*.

CHAPTER 20

OLD AND THE NEW

Many believe *The Gospels*, consisting of *Matthew, Mark, Luke* and *John* begin *The New Covenant*. When Jesus was born and at about age thirty He started His ministry as given to Him by God, His Father. Christ gives you His real reason for coming to the earth and it wasn't only to establish *The New Covenant*.

The Commission

When Jesus sent out The Twelve Apostles, He gave them this warning: “**Go NOT into the WAY of the GENTILES, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of *The House of Israel***” (Matthew 10:5-6).

When Jesus came He was only to go to The House of Israel. Clearly, Jesus answered the woman of Canaan after His Disciples told Him to send her away. “**I am NOT SENT but unto the LOST SHEEP of the HOUSE OF ISRAEL**” (Matthew 15:24). Jesus did not come to save the world but to RESTORE FIRST THE LOST SHEEP OF THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL. Christ was sent to **prove *The Old Covenant* to Israel**.

Jesus said He came to establish what was LOST. Israel, as God's **chosen witness**, was to be an example to the world as God's **people**. It is through Israel that the knowledge of God was to be known. Jesus came to restore **the path** to The Garden of Eden by

God's witness, Israel (Matthew 18:11). If Judah accepted Jesus as their Messiah, The Millennium would have begun, then and there, with Israel as God's chosen witnesses.

When Christ first came, His purpose was only to preach to Israel even though they were lost. What was He to preach?

The Gospel

When John was put in prison, Jesus came to preach a particular message. What was that message? Jesus said, "**The TIME is FULFILLED** [completed], **and the Kingdom of God is AT HAND: REPENT ye, and believe the gospel**" (Mark 1:15).

Jesus came to restore God's **kingdom** or *Old Covenant* to Israel only, but not to The Gentiles. This was not *The New Covenant* but *The Old Covenant*.

Christ's commission from God was to restore Israel to *The Old Covenant*. If they only believed, The MILLENNIUM could have started at that time. There would be NO NEED for The MESSIAH to come **the second time**. The ONE THOUSAND YEARS of WORLD PEACE was Christ's **purpose** to be born. Jesus came to forgive sin and to bring WORLD PEACE through Israel's hands. Christ preached, "**The kingdom of God is AT HAND**" or available to Israel right then and there. These were the LAST DAYS with the FOURTH BEAST, Rome, ruling The World. That is why Jesus preached "**The Kingdom is at HAND**" (Mark 1:15).

The Apostles asked Him an important question. That question was, "**Lord, will thou AT THIS TIME RESTORE AGAIN the KINGDOM to ISRAEL**" (Acts 1:6)? This wasn't *The New Covenant* but *The Old Covenant* for Israel to be God's **chosen people**

to the world. They knew Christ came to restore the PHYSICAL KINGDOM to Israel. Notice the answer Jesus gave to His Apostles. **“It is not for you to know the TIMES or the SEASONS, which the Father hath put in his OWN POWER”** (Acts 1:7). Since Christ was born to be able to forgive Israel’s sin, He came for them to REPENT, and if they did, Christ would have restored The Kingdom of God physically and **the millennium** would have started.

The Curse

After John, The Baptist and Christ fulfilled their ministry to restore The Jews and **the temple** to God, Christ was crucified. Neither John nor Jesus were accepted to restore **the fathers to the children** or **the children to the fathers**. Therefore, The World Curse, according to Malachi 4, had to take place.

Since God gave them 70 years to repent, *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant* ran **concurrently**. Notice the Hebrews 8:1-13 **“decree,”** **“For if he [Christ] were on earth, [Paul’s day] he SHOULD NOT BE A PRIEST.”** Why not? **“...Seeing there are priests that offer gifts according to the Law”** (Hebrews 8:4). Then Hebrews 8:6 announces Jesus obtained a more EXCELLENT ministry and that He is the **executor** of a BETTER **covenant** which has greater promises.

What was this *New Covenant* to do that was better? This *New Covenant* was not a bunch of do’s and dont’s like *The Old Covenant*, but to write God’s Laws in **your heart and mind**. *The New Covenant* changes human nature to be SINLESS and allows everyone to inherit **salvation**. A GIFT of GRACE.

Then Paul ends by saying *The Old Covenant* will VANISH. When?

When **the temple** and Priesthood are gone. Remember, Jesus would not be a **priest on earth**. The cardinal point is, as long as **the temple** and The Levitical Priesthood were there, **BOTH covenants** ran **concurrently**. When **the temple** was destroyed in 70 A.D., *The Old Covenant* would VANISH. Until the physical temple was destroyed, the CURSE upon “the work” did NOT GO INTO FORCE.

Until the 70 years had elapsed, as with Judah's first captivity to Babylon, they wouldn't be forgiven. Since Judah refused to accept The Messiah, Christ, after 70 years or 70 A.D., **the curse went into effect** and **the temple** was destroyed.

Christ's Ministry

Jesus, at age 30, started His ministry. This ministry was to restore God's **physical kingdom** to Israel if The Jews would have accepted their Messiah. The One Thousand Years of World Peace would have started as The Millennium.

Now before World Peace could come, the CURSE in Malachi was to take place with **the fall of the temple**. After **the curse** of Matthew 24 concludes, Jesus will **return** and complete His ministry by **stopping the world from complete annihilation**. The Millennium will then take place.

The Four Gospels and *Acts* cover The Ministry of Jesus and His Apostles. Now let's explore The Ministry of Christ and His Apostles.

Proof Of The New Covenant

When Jesus was baptized and was approved by God as His Son,

Jesus had a 40-day battle in **the wilderness**, where He was tried and tested by Satan. Christ, in **that temptation**, like any 40-day (or 40-year) trial which God had allowed, was to prove Jesus indeed was The Messiah. He won that battle by living EVERY WORD OF GOD (Matthew 4:4).

Christ had to do everything prophesied for the next 3½ years of His Ministry. Even His Disciples had a hard time accepting Jesus as The Christ. Notice what Jesus had to tell His Disciples after He was resurrected: **“Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and UPBRAIDED THEM with their UNBELIEF and HARDNESS of HEART, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen”** (Mark 16:14).

After being with Christ for 3½ years of His Ministry, they still DOUBTED HIM. It is time to study His Ministry for PROOF of His Messiahship.

God’s **“word”** or **“testament”** proved Jesus’ Messiahship and the validity is beyond doubt.

CHAPTER 21

THE FOUR GOSPELS

The Four Gospels are quite diverse in telling the story of Christ's human existence. This is especially true with *The Gospel of John*. Our purpose is to find out what *The Four Gospels* have to do with the "testament" or "will" of God.

Synoptic Gospels

Remember, the entire *Bible* is God's "story" about His "will" as administered by Christ. When you study *The New Testament*, you will find that *The New Covenant* and *Old Covenant* ran concurrently till the destruction of the **temple**, where God dwelt. From that point a **spiritual temple** was now God's **house** or **dwelling**.

The *First Three Gospels* are known as SYNOPTIC or similar in describing the human life of Jesus while on earth. John's *Gospel* is totally different than the first three. There is an important SPIRITUAL difference between the three synoptic *Gospels* of *Matthew*, *Mark* and *Luke* as opposed to *The Gospel of John*. Why?

The three synoptic Gospels focus on Israel and *The Old Covenant* in regard to turning the hearts of the children to the fathers, as mentioned in Malachi 4. Also, Christ's commission to cleanse the **temple** and its Priesthood. These *Three Gospels* are all written prior to **the temple's** destruction in 70 A.D.

John's Gospel is presumed to be written as late as 90 A.D., near the

end of The First Century.

State Of The Temple And Church

There was a time period of 40 years from Christ's ministry when God forgave sin and would restore **the holy temple**. It was The Jew's **time** to be tested and proved just as their fathers were tested **in the wilderness**. However, they failed by rejecting Christ as The Messiah or Savior. In 70 A.D., **the temple was** destroyed, not leaving one stone on another. God no longer dwelt in **an earthly-built house**, but desired, instead, **a spiritual one in each Christian**.

With the **church's body**, each Christian is where God now dwells as His **temple** (Hebrews 3). What happened to **the church** at its birth on The Day of Pentecost? You are now about to be set on a **Christian spiritual journey** in *The New Testament* to **prove** an extremely important **spiritual truth**. Is Jesus The Christ? That is "the important question." It is also the same question Jesus asked Peter in Matthew 16:15-17. "**But, whom say ye that I am?**" This is the very battle Jesus had with Satan during the forty days in **the wilderness**, **which** Satan asked of Christ (Matthew 4:3). It has been the question asked from the beginning of His birth. Is Jesus, The Christ or The Anointed One? (Jesus is spelled and pronounced "Yeshua" in Hebrew). The question over and over again was Jesus, **the son of Joseph**, The Real Messiah?

Is Jesus The Messiah, **the promised seed, who will forgive all sins and bring world peace?** You need to find out if *The New Testament* answers this question. Notice Christ's statement before He ascended to heaven to sit on the right hand of God, The Father. Jesus told Thomas, "**Because thou has seen me, thou has believed; blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have**

believed” (John 20:29).

Do you comprehend the wonderful statement Jesus made? Christ told **doubting Thomas** it was great for him to believe in Him, but there is a **blessing given to those who have not seen Him and yet believe**. A special reward goes to those who personally were not alive to see the human life of Christ. This includes all Christians who had not been alive when He was on this earth, including those who were alive but never laid eyes on Him.

This is the **ultimate question for the world**. Is Jesus The True Messiah or Savior of The World? If not, **the world** is in sin and, therefore, must die. *The New Testament* will definitely answer the question if Jesus is “Yeshua,” The Messiah.

The Gospel of Matthew, as well as the other two synoptic gospels, was written between 58 to 63 A.D. This left SEVEN years before **the temple’s** destruction. Why were these three gospels written before **the temple’s** destruction?

The oldest **gospel** was written by Mark for a very good reason. Matthew, however, was **the first gospel** in *The New Testament*. Why? Matthew was a publican or tax collector who followed Jesus as an Apostle. He was quite well-off and had feasts at his home and he kept very good records.

Remember *The New Testament* was a continuum of God’s “will” which proves Jesus is The Christ or Messiah. Tradition has said that Matthew had written this **gospel** originally in Hebrew. Why? Tradition relates he also wrote the text in Greek as well. Again, why?

Why was *The Gospel* written at all? How does Matthew begin?

The Abrahamic Covenant

To many, it is fatiguing to have to read all the genealogy. But this *Gospel of Matthew* starts with David and Abraham and their genealogy. Abraham was given the PROMISE that The SAVIOR would come from his seed or progeny (Hebrews 11:13). Also King David was promised that from his seed a King would always exist to **SIT ON HIS THRONE** (II Samuel 23:5). Abraham had **a contract** from God. The Abrahamic **covenant** promised salvation through Isaac and His progeny, which promised rulership or God's **kingdom**.

Now you can understand why Matthew **is the first gospel** in *The New Testament*. It proves who The Savior of The World will be and who will be The King over God's **kingdom**. This is why the genealogy starts with Abraham, **the father of the faithful**.

This *Gospel of Matthew* had to be written to PROVE Jesus Christ was The Messiah through the genealogy. **“So all the generations from Abraham to David are FOURTEEN [2x7] generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are FOURTEEN generations; and from the carrying away unto Babylon unto Christ are FOURTEEN generations (Matthew 1:17).**

Matthew wrote **the first gospel** to LEGALLY prove Jesus was The Christ. He was **the promised seed** in both Abraham's **time** and King David's **time**. He was The Savior of The World and The King of Kings in God's **kingdom** (Genesis 41:32).

The seventh year is the year of rest, God's **rest** (Hebrews 3 and 4), and two sevens or fourteen years substantiates it is of God. The first fourteen years proves Abraham and David received **the cov-**

enants of promise. The second, David to The Babylonian captivity was fourteen or 2x7 when Judah returns to rebuild **the temple** and then from **the temple restoration to Christ is fourteen generations** to prove Jesus is The Messiah on a legal basis.

Each of these generations is not necessarily all the children of each father's progeny but only those generations who prove Jesus is **the promised seed** or The Messiah. Matthew gives LEGAL status to Jesus as The Christ, appointed by God to fulfill **the promise** made to David and Abraham.

That is why *The Book of Matthew* ends with The Jews where the Roman authority set up guards so no one could steal Christ's body from the grave, which if He was raised, would have proved Jesus was The Christ (Matthew 28:12-15). His Disciples were then told to **witness this gospel to the world**, so those who did not witness His life on earth would BELIEVE.

Lack Of Faith

The Gospels reveal a lack of FAITH on the part of those who were with Jesus at the time of His EARTHLY ministry. **Even Mary Magdalene**, from whom He cast out seven demons, didn't believe Jesus was **resurrected**. After Mary told His Apostles (who were given power to heal people and cast-out demons) they also did not believe Christ was resurrected. Here is what they thought when Mary told them: "**And they, when they HAD HEARD that He was ALIVE and had been seen of her, BELIEVED NOT**" (Mark 16:11).

The Apostles had seen numerous miracles of healings, plus **the resurrection to life** from those who had died, and still they couldn't believe He was **resurrected**. Each of *The Four Gos-*

pels of Christ's life manifests the lack of belief or FAITH in The Messiah.

Once again Jesus declared He is **The WAY, The TRUTH and The LIFE**. Then He said no man can come to The FATHER but **BY ME** (John 14:5-6).

Then Philip asked Jesus to show them The Father, so it would suffice them. Christ knowing their lack of FAITH told them how they could believe. After Jesus reminded them if they had SEEN HIM and saw Christ living His life, then they would HAVE SEEN THE FATHER. They were both "**one**." Christ said The FATHER DWELLS IN THE SON. They were exactly alike (Hebrews 1:1-2). "**Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me**" (John 14:8-10)? Hebrews 1:1-2 states that God speaks to you in these LAST DAYS by The Son. When Jesus speaks, it is as if God, The Father was speaking to you. That is why John 6:29 declares God's "**work**" is to believe on Him whom God has sent. When Christ speaks those "**words**" they are the very WORDS OF GOD. Jesus is **THE WORD OF GOD** (John 1:1 and Deuteronomy 18:18). *The Gospels* were written especially for those in the future, to REVEAL JESUS WAS GOD'S "WORK" and was truly THE MESSIAH.

Finally, Jesus knowing they hadn't received God's Holy Spirit told His followers, including Philip the following: "**Believe thou not that I AM IN THE FATHER, and the FATHER IN ME?...or ELSE believe ME for the VERY WORKS SAKE**" (John 14:10). Christians are God's **temple** where God DWELLS. God does not

DWELL in EARTHLY TEMPLES but in a SPIRITUAL ONE. Christians are God's **temple** where God DWELLS "**in them.**"

This is the lesson Jesus was teaching Philip and the rest of The Apostles. They hadn't as yet received The Holy Spirit which would have led them to TRUTH (John 12:17). Christ asked them to believe "**the works**" they saw Him do. For unconverted people it is a SIGN which makes them believe.

Once you repent and are teachable, then with God's Holy Spirit, God will reveal HIS WORD. Then you can make a truthful choice based upon FACTS. Until then **the life** of Christ reveals The MESSIAH by the MIRACLES or signs He left. Now you have the REASON God had *The GOSPELS* written.

The Gospel of Matthew establishes the LEGAL right Jesus had through Abraham and David. All the miracles He performed prove His Messiahship to the UNBELIEVER, and Christ's **life** proves to Christians by His "**words,**" He is indeed, THE SON OF GOD.

The FOUR GOSPELS do MANIFEST Jesus is The SON OF GOD, your MESSIAH. *The Bible* theme has **biblically** come to the place that a people MORE WORTHY than The Israelites or The Jews will accept The Christ. They will REPENT and accept The Christ and be CALLED to be WITNESSES of THE WORD OF GOD.

Here is how *The Fourth Gospel of John* ends: "**And there are also MANY OTHER THINGS which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one I suppose that even the WORLD itself could not CONTAIN the books that SHOULD BE WRITTEN. AMEN**" (John 21:25).

With *The New Testament*, Jesus is directly administrating *The Tes-*

tament of The Father. Every “**word**” reveals the WAY TO SALVATION. Satan’s purpose is to **DISPROVE** Jesus is The Son of God. The battle between Christ and Satan is the same. Is Jesus God’s Son and does *The Bible*, God’s “**word**,” prove it?

The Gospel of Mark continues the proof for **the unconverted** and **the converted**. The choice is yours.

CHAPTER 22

LUKE AND ACTS

Jesus was asked, “Are **THERE FEW** that be saved?” (Luke 13:23). Christ answered, “Strive to enter in at the strait gate [New Jerusalem]: for **MANY**, [world Christianity] I say unto you, **WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, and shall NOT BE ABLE**” (Luke 13:24).

Christ prophesied the Christian movement “to come” with its result. After 3½ years of His Ministry there were only 120 true followers of The Messiah (Acts 1:15). *The Gospel of Luke* is written from a true Christian point of view. A few did follow Jesus and regarded Him as the real Son of God.

Most Blinded

Near the conclusion of Christ’s earthly ministry to restore Israel to the **kingdom**, He turns to a nation more worthy than The Jews. Here is His answer to those who rejected Him as The Messiah. Now Jesus would turn from The Jews to those who believed He was The Son of God. Christ declared, “**Behold, your house** [temple] **is left unto you DESOLATE: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the *time* come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord**” (Luke 13:35). This foretells the fall of Judah and **the temple**.

The transition from *The Old Covenant* made with Israel was now going to include people who were **MORE WORTHY** than The

Jews (Matthew 21:48). Who are they (Matthew 21:43)?

Peter Opens The Kingdom

Jesus made Peter the one who had the keys to **the kingdom** (Matthew 16:18-19). Peter was the one who was used to open the gates to God's heavenly **kingdom** when Cornelius, The Gentile Roman Centurion Soldier, was converted.

Jesus, just before He died, rejected The Jews and they were not allowed to restore King David's **kingdom**. **The temple** would be destroyed and **a new covenant** was to take place but by comparison only a few would truly accept Jesus as The Messiah. With the destruction of **the temple**, Malachi's "**world curse**" began. Now Israel would have to wait for the second coming of The Messiah. Only the few out of the world would even have the FAITH to follow Jesus. Read the parable of the sower and the seed in Matthew 13. Only some take **hold in fertile soil** and bear FRUIT as **witnesses** of Christ, while the rest are deceived (Matthew 24:5).

Peter, after hearing the centurion, said, "**Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in EVERY NATION he that fears [honor] Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him**" (Act 10:34-35).

The individuals accepted, are those from all nations such as Israel, Judah and The Gentile nations who had highly honored God as their Father and did strive for **righteousness**, so they are considered more worthy. Plain and simple, those of any nation who believe Jesus and what He said shall be saved. This is *The New Covenant* in a nutshell.

Luke, as Paul's companion, scribe and physician, knew every-

thing about Christ and Christianity. *Luke's Gospel* confirms what real Christianity is. Notice Luke's reason for writing his version of Christ, The Son of God. Luke wrote **this gospel** about 60 A.D. when Christian **churches** were already having a diversity of beliefs. The original Apostles would all be dead within the next few years, except The Apostle John. The destruction of **the temple** where **The Jewish Christians** and **Apostles** worshipped God would be destroyed within ten short years. Christianity needed **the truth** about The Son of God.

Luke wrote this **gospel** to a person called EXCELLENT THEOPHILUS. The name "Theophilus" comes from two Greek words "Theo-God" and "philus-love." Luke wrote to a person who was a "**lover** of God." Perhaps this may be a synonym of all "lovers" of God.

Here is Luke's clear purpose for writing his *gospel*: "**For as much as many have taken in hand to set in order a declaration of those things WHICH ARE MOST SURELY BELIEVED AMONG US, even as they DELIVERED THEM UNTO US, which from the beginning were EYEWITNESSES and MINISTERS of "the Word" [Christ]. It seemed good to me also, ,having had PERFECT UNDERSTANDING OF ALL THINGS from the VERY FIRST, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus. That those mightiest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed**" (Luke 1:1-4).

Matthew's Gospel proved the **legal right** of Christ to be The True Messiah and restore **the kingdom**. *Mark's Gospel* with Malachi proves that He came to restore The Torah and *The Old Covenant* or the earth would be cursed.

Each *gospel* has its direct purpose for being written, but the **three**

synoptic gospels have similar history and speak about the same events, but each *gospel* does add specific additions to these events which addresses their different specific purpose. The **FOURTH Gospel of John** is not a **gospel** as the other three. John was different because the first three occurred before the destruction of **the temple** when Christians fled Jerusalem as Jesus told them to do in Matthew 24. In *The Gospel of John*, *The Old Covenant* ceased with the end of **the temple**. *John's Gospel* addresses *The New Covenant* on a **SPIRITUAL BASIS**. Realize when you read *John's Gospel* he covered the story in a spiritual order.

Each **gospel** addresses a specific purpose and order. Matthew shows Christ as the **LEGAL HEIR**. Mark relates **PROPHECY** while Luke shows **A WAY OF LIFE**. All three synoptic gospels prove Jesus is **the legitimate** Son of God, genealogically, prophetically and the **WAY HE LIVED** by His works to the unconverted. Whether you are a true Christian with God's Spirit or spiritually **BLIND**, the **VERY WORKS** of Jesus prove He is The Messiah.

Satan's Battle

Satan's desire is to **CREATE DOUBT** that Jesus is Yeshua, The Christ, the **VERY SON OF GOD** (Matthew 4:3). That is why God had to write in His "TESTIMONY" or "WILL" who was The **PROMISED SEED** and The Mediator of God's "Will." Jesus was sinless, but also had to prove **IN FAITH** He was The Son of God by **HIS WORKS**. That is why *the gospels* had to be written. **To prove He was GOD'S VERY SON**. History, from the birth of Jesus Christ to this present day, has always challenged whether He is truly God's Son.

Today, a barrage of attacks are focused to deny Jesus is The Messiah. Satan has not changed his tactics from the **BEGINNING**.

You will see the REST OF THE SCRIPTURES continually deal with this problem. Christian's role and FAITH ALL FOCUS on the same question. Is JESUS the very SON OF GOD and The TRUE MESSIAH? He is The EXECUTOR of GOD'S "WILL" to save the world (I John 4:14). Christ was FAITHFUL and He was The Son of God as a WITNESS (Revelation 1:5). Now with His death a NEW WITNESS comes upon the scene.

Acts

Luke wrote *The Book of Acts* just as he wrote *the gospel* which bears his name. Just before Jesus left His Apostles after teaching them for forty days, they asked Him when God would restore **the kingdom** to Israel. They thought this event would take place soon since Christ had paid for the world's sins.

Read Acts 1. At this point, they did not have God's Holy Spirit to guide them to the **truth**. Jesus told them God would restore **the kingdom** by God's decision when "**the time was right**." They did not, at that time, GRASP the CURSE UPON THE WORLD which was to come. Then Jesus gave them a COMMISSION.

Since the world was now CURSED because **the world** (Rome) and Christ's own people (Jews) denied He was GOD'S SON, The APOSTLES and all CHRISTIANS must become witnesses.

From the time of Christ to the time He will **return** all peoples who repent must be "**the witnesses**." That is Christianity! "**But ye shall receive POWER, after that the Holy Ghost [Spirit] is come upon you: and ye shall be WITNESSES UNTO ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the UTMOST PART OF THE EARTH**" (Acts 1:8). This is one of the best verses describing what a CHRISTIAN is or should be.

Christians are to **think**, **behave** and **do** what Christ did. That is the MIND OF CHRIST and having Christ “in you” (Philemon 2:5 and Colossians 1:27).

Christianity is not a RELIGION but a WAY OF LIFE, following Christ's LIFE. That is the responsibility Jesus gave to His Apostles, but, also to you and all Christians.

CHAPTER 23

THE OLD TO THE NEW TEACHING

The Book of Acts holds far more than just EARLY CHURCH HISTORY. Acts is the “history of change” from The Old Covenant to The New Covenant so Christianity could repent and have their human nature changed so they can WITNESS CHRIST TO THE WORLD (Acts 1:8). That is why The Book of Acts ends with Paul in Rome during his first imprisonment. Paul had to witness Christ by covering the known world so Paul witnessed in Rome. Rome was the fourth world ruler which was the last beast in Daniel.

Christianity – A Jewish Sect

Just before The Feast of Pentecost, there were only 120 followers of Christ. So very few believed all of Christ’s miracles. At this time, Judas Iscariot was replaced by Matthias. The 120 included Jews as well as other converts from all parts of The Roman World. The Jews were **religiously divided** with **the teachings** of The Pharisees, who believed in a **resurrection** while The Sadducees did not. Likewise, The Essenes, who were a very isolated sect along with many other sects. The Jews had differing denominations just as they do today. This is the **history of world religion**. It is why God calls it Babylon or “**confusion**.”

Christianity was considered a new sect of The Jews. At this point they were all waiting for The Messiah to restore **the kingdom**

to Israel. All looked to deliverance from the FOURTH BEAST prophesied in Daniel. The Apostles with the followers were waiting for Jesus to **return** as well. They knew they were in the last days.

When The Holy Spirit fell upon the followers “**as of fire**,” Peter stood up and preached. All of them spoke in the different languages of the people. This was a **sign of tongues** which God had given The Apostles. It was given, so when necessary, The Apostles were able, **with this gift of tongues**, to speak in the languages of the individuals who had come from distant and different lands. God was calling some of these unbelievers or unconverted by this miraculous gift which made them understand in their own language (I Corinthians 14:22). They were probably amazed to hear God’s “**word**” and may have been willing to listen because they were hearing *The Gospel* spoken in their own language. For them to even bother to listen to Peter was due to hearing and understanding The Gospel of Christ in their own languages. This indeed was a **miracle** from God. This gift was given so **the unbelieving** would understand the truth (I Corinthians 14).

Paul, as The Apostle to The Gentiles, spoke in many foreign languages to be able to reach everyone (I Corinthians 14:18). Remember, **signs** are for “**the unbelieving**” and those who “**LACK FAITH**” so they will be amazed at God’s powers (I Corinthians 14:22).

That one sermon of Peter ended with three thousand being baptized. From this point Christianity continued to grow rapidly. However, this new growth was causing a Jewish phenomenon which considered another denomination waiting for The Messiah and **the restoration** of the **kingdom**. *The Old Covenant* under Moses, which **was added** to The Torah which was preached, meant the

followers of Christ were known as Messianic Jews. Everyone had to be **circumcised** and keep The Law.

James, The Just

James, Christ's oldest brother, **became the head of the family** when Jesus died. When Jesus died, James, as the next firstborn, became the family's overseer or bishop. As a family head, he was "**a church elder**" and as Christ's brother became The Bishop or overseer of The Jerusalem Church.

James, Peter and John became **PILLARS** in **the church**. James was highly respected and was called James, The Just because he was meticulous in following The Torah. James was, also, honored by The Sanhedrin and by the other **priests**.

All followers of Jesus were keepers of The Law of Moses, *The Old Covenant*, with all The Holy Days of God as well as worshippers in **the temple**. As long as **the temple** stood The Levitical Priesthood and *Old Covenant* remained (Hebrews 8:4-13).

All were Jews or proselytes who were circumcised. All were worshippers in **the temple**. The Gentiles were known as **MES-SIANIC JEWS** or followers of Jesus as The Christ. Remember, The Apostles were first commissioned to be witnesses of Jesus in Jerusalem and Judah (Acts 4:33, Acts 5:14-16 and Acts 5:42). In fact, many of **the other Priests** turned to Jesus as The Christ (Acts 6:7).

The believing Jews and proselytes (Gentiles) were isolated from the rest of the world. They couldn't even socialize together and hold festive meals. Everyone had to be circumcised to be a brother, or so they thought. The **promise** was to Judah or Israelites and

proselytes only. It was like most present-day denominations, you were either IN OR OUT. Membership was all based upon physical “**works**” such as circumcision. *The Old Covenant* as administered by Moses was to be strictly followed. However, **each sect**, in the varied groups had varied beliefs like The Pharisees, Sadducees and The Essenes. The Messianic Jews had their own beliefs and their own form of structure. All attended **the temple** and local **synagogues**. They were believers of *The Old Covenant* which included The Apostles and their followers. They all religiously kept The Law.

The Dispersion

Of all the deacons, Stephen stood up in the **synagogue** and preached about Christ. He told them, they had ignorantly crucified The Son of God. Those who didn't believe in Jesus became irate and stoned him to death. A man called SAUL stood by holding Stephen's clothes as they stoned him to death, but Stephen's reply was, “**Lord lay not this sin to their charge**” and then he died (Acts 7). This act produced a great persecution in The Jerusalem Church and they fled to Judea and Samaria. Only The Apostles remained in Jerusalem (Acts 8:1).

The Gospel Spreads

Mark called his gospel *The Gospel of Jesus Christ*. It is the exact message Christ commissioned to His Apostles in Acts 1:8. Jerusalem, after hearing “the word” rejected Christ. **Persecution** doesn't really work, but when you hit bottom, it does allow “**believers to manifest their FAITH.**”

At this time, *The Gospel of Christ* was ready to penetrate Judea and Samaria. For about twenty years The Jews persecuted The

Messianic Jews. It was not for doctrinal purposes, as *The Old Covenant* was still in force and worship in **the temple** was continued with everyone in attendance. Everything stayed the same, but what was rejected was Jesus, as The Christ.

Saul Becomes Paul

From Acts 7, 8 and 9 you can read of Saul, who was a zealot and violently opposed to the followers of Christ. On his way to Damascus to imprison Christians he miraculously is called to be an APOSTLE to The Gentiles by a vision sent directly from Jesus. The word “APOSTOLIS” in Greek means “one sent.” The “one sent” must be directly called by Jesus for him to be an Apostle. They must, also, do the signs and wonders just as Christ did (II Corinthians 12). The commission as an APOSTLE **cannot be passed on but can only be one directly chosen by Christ**, Himself. Paul was an example of this.

No longer is his name Saul, The Zealot, but now he was to be known as Paul, “**the worker**,” which is how the word “Paul” is defined in Greek. The stage is set for the calling of The GENTILES into The Church of God. What is the next major event in *Acts*? The remaining eleven Apostles had to cast lots so Matthias was chosen to replace Judas (Acts 1:23).

Peter, The Key Keeper

Acts 10 and 11 reveals the **apostolic commission** must now go to The Gentiles. Peter, with **the keys to the kingdom**, opens the door of Christianity to **Cornelius**, The Centurion Gentile. Peter defines those whom God accepts as more worthy than The Jews, who rejected Christ. God accepts all peoples; Jew or Gentile who TRULY fear Him and want to SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS, how-

ever, not the human form of self-righteousness. Not that type of “**foolish righteousness**” **but the righteousness of Christ** (Job 40:8). Now Paul seems to take pre-eminence in *The Book of Acts*. Not because he was greater than the other Apostles but he was The Apostle to The Gentiles and was ready to go to the entire known world.

The World

What is meant by “**the world?**” There were many other humans on earth besides The Roman Empire. Why, then, is **the world** viewed from the perspective of Rome? It all has to do with PROPHECY.

In *Daniel* there are only **four world ruling empires**. No one has conquered the world since. In addition these four world ruling empires, according to prophecy in *Daniel* and *Revelation*, come out of the sea which is The Mediterranean Sea. They are **the four kingdoms** of **Babylon** – Media, Persia, Greece and Rome and did come forth from The Mediterranean Sea. The FOURTH BEAST is the worst and a composite of the first three – lion, bear and a leopard and is full of violence. They carry The Mark of The Beast carrying the number 666 (in *The Book of Daniel* and in *Revelation 13*).

This fourth beast is Rome or its IMAGE which Christ will destroy when He returns. But, before Christ's **second coming**, because of **the world's curse**, He will intervene at Armageddon to save the WORLD from SUICIDE. That is why *The Bible* refers to “**the world**” as The Roman Empire or as IT'S IMAGE. When Jesus **returns**, the world will look like or be as The ROMAN EMPIRE – **VERY VIOLENT!** Paul was now ready to fulfill his calling and ministry. From Acts 13 to 20 Paul spreads *The Gospel of*

Christ to The Gentile **world** until his first imprisonment.

A Great Doctrinal Change

You will see doctrine can and does change. God's "testimony" to **save the world** through His Son, Jesus by making humans Holy and **perfect** like God **never changes**. The **covenants** or **contracts** to achieve **salvation** can and do change. God's **purpose** is to **save the world** (1 John 4:14). God does what HE "WILLS" as stated in I Timothy 2:4. It gives God great pleasure to do His "will" because God is full of love and gets great joy from giving (I John 4:8).

The Three Names

The change from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant* caused Christians to be known or called by three different terms.

Sect Of The Nazarenes

The Jews with their leaders called The Christians, a sect of The Nazarenes. Since The Jews rejected Jesus as The Messiah, they called all Jews who believed in Christ, The Messiah as **Nazarenes**. Why? Because Jesus was from Nazareth and Joseph, as His human father, they referred to the followers of Jesus as The Nazarenes.

When Christ died and his brother James replaced Jesus as the head of the family (after Joseph died), James became the elder son and therefore Bishop or overseer of The Jerusalem Church.

James, "The Just," so named because he strictly adhered to The Law, *The Old Covenant*. The Jews rejecting Jesus as Their Mes-

siah, therefore, recognized the followers of Jesus as another Jewish sect calling them The Sect of The Nazarenes (Acts 24:5).

Messianic Jews

Christians within their own community were called Messianic Jews. These were Jews who followed The Law zealously and believed in Jesus as The Messiah (Acts 21:20).

Christians

The Churches of God, as long as they only included Jews or Israelites (that is “**circumcised**” Gentiles) keeping The Law, call themselves Messianic Jews to this very day.

A momentous event was about to take place. God was going to accept The Gentiles, who were rejected before from “**The Commonwealth of Israel**” unless they became proselytes.

Now, God, by The Holy Spirit, was changing His dwelling place from **the earthly temple** to **a spiritual temple**. God would no longer dwell in a physical temple but **within each Christian's** “human” temple (Hebrews 3:1-6). This was the change from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*. Once God's Holy Spirit dwells in each Christian, whether Jew or Gentile without physical works, but with **faith**, they are all Disciples of Christ and known as Christians or **followers** of Christ (Acts 11:26).

What Is A Sect?

- 1 **Sects were allowed and accepted within the Christian community. In Greek, the word for “SECT” is “HERESIS” or “one who spiritually disagrees.”**

However when a “sect” becomes “schismatic” then, after the second admission they must be rejected. To be “SCHISMATIC” the purpose is “to cause division” or “separation.”

Being of a differing point of view “**spiritually**” or “**doctrinally**” does not put one out of the church. Only if one breaks the commandments and literally sins, can put you out of “the church.” Spiritual growth is a process and the whole church must BE FREE to grow spiritually. Only those who intend to divide the church are, therefore, causing a SCHISM in the church so, those individuals must be excluded from the whole. That is why The Jews accepted The Messianic Jews who believed in Jesus like The Pharisees and Sadducees; although one group believed in a resurrection while the other didn't. They were all still, in the brotherhood or congregation of Israel.

- 2 Within The Christian community was a SECT of The Pharisees who accepted Jesus, as God's Son, The Messiah and were called The Messianic Jews.**

Old Wine To New Wine

After the death of Stephen, The Jews **persecuted the church** which spread The Gospel to The Gentile areas. They went as far as Southern Turkey (today) and especially Antioch where the followers of **Jesus** were first called **Christians** (Acts 8:4 and Acts 11:19-26). Why were they called Christians?

In Acts 11:20-21 while only speaking to The Jews in Antioch, some Greeks were present and a **great number believed**. Peter had already opened the door to The Gentiles through Cornelius, The Gentile Centurion. Peter also learned *The Gospel* about Jesus

as The Son of God which was to be preached only to The Jews but now was changing. Now God is completing Christ's commission to go to **the world** (Acts 1:8).

A **change of doctrine** is transpiring. God's **chosen people**, Israel, now included The Gentiles without The Letter of The Law. Peter said God now accepts all people as long as they fear (or honor) God and **SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS** (Acts 10:35).

No longer are they **Messianic Jews** who are of The **Sect** of The **Nazarenes** (Jesus and James) but they are now called **Christians**.

Speaking of The Greeks in Antioch, "**And the HAND of the Lord was with them and a great multitude believed, and turned unto the Lord**" (Acts 11:21). Gentiles became Christians in a **new way**. *The New Covenant* was going from The Old Wine to The New. The Jews, liking The Old Wine, *The Old Covenant*, found it difficult to enter *The New Covenant*. That is why God, only, opened the hearts of "**the remnant**" of Israel (Romans 11).

Remember, The Ten Lost Tribes, called Israel were scattered into **all nations and lost their identity**. **Eventually they were interpersed in all the lands and were known as The Gentiles**.

Acts 15

Certain Messianic Jews came down from Jerusalem and declared The Gentiles, as other proselytes to their religion, had to be circumcised and keep The Law (Acts 15:5). These Messianic Jews were a pharisaical **SECT** in the brotherhood now called Christians. The Apostles and **elders** of the church came together to discuss the matter. After much disputing, Peter rose and declared how God used him to convert a Gentile, Cornelius, without circumcision or following The Law.

Then Peter said that God gave Cornelius and his household The Holy Spirit without any of the “works.” It was God’s Holy Spirit which Peter said made them a part of The Commonwealth of Israel **without any of the requirements** of The Law.

James, as Bishop of Jerusalem, declared since God gave His Holy Spirit without the “deeds” or the “works” of The Law that no further requirement should be placed upon The Gentile Christians.

This was a major DOCTRINAL CHANGE. Now with so many Gentiles coming into **the church**, The Jerusalem Church decreed Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law (Acts 15:24). The Jerusalem Church accepted Gentiles, who were converted with God’s Holy Spirit, **to only abstain from meats offered to idols and not eat blood or things strangled and keep from fornication.**

Though twenty years had passed since Jesus died, *The Old Covenant* with The Jews was in force. **The temple** was still a place of worship. All Jews were still committed to *The Old Covenant*. Now God revealed *The New Covenant* was beginning with The Gentiles. God gave His Holy Spirit to them without the stipulation that they must be circumcised or had to keep The Law. Paul did not bother The Jews concerning the “**works**” or the “**deeds**” of The Law. He only preached **salvation** without the “works” of The Law, only to The Gentiles. So, The Jews no longer persecuted Christians.

Paul’s Imprisonment

Paul, after his trips to The Gentile communities, decided to come back to Jerusalem and was attacked. James warned him and suggested he join the other Jews who were doing the “works” of The Law **while they were under a vow**. Paul joined them and followed The Law but that wasn’t good enough for Paul’s enemies. Paul’s adversaries said

when Paul was preaching to The Gentiles, The Jews were there as well. While The Jews were present Paul told them to forsake Moses and not to circumcise their children or follow the customs of The Law (Acts 21:21). It wasn't Paul preaching *The New Covenant* to The Gentiles but that The Jews were, also, there during Paul's preaching. That was the problem. Paul was taken prisoner, accused and finally sent to Rome for trial where he had to stay for two years.

God had decreed that Paul should go to the headquarters of the FOURTH BEAST (in Daniel) and preach to them. In fact, it was during these two years Paul preached to the household of The Emperor and some of them were converted.

The Book of Acts concludes with Paul's first imprisonment preaching to **the fourth beast** with a few more converted.

The transition from *The Old Covenant* to The New was witnessed to Jerusalem, Judea, Samaria and now the uttermost parts of the earth just as Christ commissioned His Disciples (Acts 1:8).

CHAPTER 24

JOHN'S SPIRITUAL GOSPEL

John's Gospel is not synoptic as *Matthew, Mark and Luke*. The synoptic Gospels prove that Jesus is a legal son of Abraham and David. Prophecy, also, substantiates it, as well as, what true Christians believe. The *other Gospel* follows a chronology whereas *John's Gospel* doesn't. Why not?

God And Christ Work Daily

John 2 introduces Jesus making wine at The Cana Wedding. This is when Christ turns water into wine. Later Jesus enters **the temple** and casts out the money changers for corrupting God's place of worship. John's gospel now concentrates upon the new spiritual covenant. The **temple** had been destroyed in 70 A.D. Remember, John's Gospel was written after the temple was destroyed.

Chronologically, this **temple** event does not occur until the end of Christ's ministry. John's purpose is all about SALVATION and the work Christ and His Father do. Chronology is not the purpose, but spiritual growth and how He and God do The Work of Salvation.

John, The Baptist then gives you the answer concerning the miracle of making water into wine.

John 3:29 states, "**He that hath the BRIDE is the BRIDE-GROOM: but the FRIEND [Best Man] of the bridegroom,**

which standeth and heareth him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled."

The Cana marriage "**miracle**" introduces the new wine, "*The New Covenant*" as a miracle that Christ performs or does "**the work.**" John declares Jesus is The Bridegroom and John, The Baptist rejoices over "**the voice**" of The Bridegroom. Why? Because Christ's "**work**" is to marry His Bride, "**the church,**" which is His **body.** Read Ephesians 5:22-32.

Remember Jesus changes the water into wine. Ephesians declares Christ cleanses **the church,** His **body,** by the washing of the water of "**the word.**" How does He cleanse His Bride by spilling His **blood,** represented by The New Wine or *The New Covenant*? The miraculous "works" Jesus did as a sign to UNBELIEVERS all carried a **spiritual message of** the real WORKS Christ came to do.

The Cana Miracle

At the wedding feast Jesus asked for the servants to bring jars filled with water. These jars were for purification to enter **the temple** where God dwelt. Once the water was turned into wine, the governor or the one in charge of the feast, declared that most people liked the old wine because it tastes better, but Christ's miracle of the new wine was, indeed, far better.

This wedding miracle **spiritually** portrays Jesus as The Bridegroom at His Wedding of His Bride. This better wine was *The New Covenant* as opposed to *The Old Covenant.* It seems people preferred the old wine.

Each miracle, especially in John's Gospel, has **great spiritual**

significance. This wedding miracle is recorded only in John's *Gospel* and not the other three. The reason being John's *Gospel* covers Christ's **spiritual purpose**.

After the wedding you find Jesus in **the temple** in Jerusalem. Even though this event doesn't occur before His last Passover, John's *Gospel* has His **temple event** close to the **miracle** of changing water into wine. Why? Jesus becomes furious when He sees His Father's **house, the temple**, corrupted in order to make money. He casts out the money changers.

The reason these events, **the wedding** and **the corruption of the temple**, are together is, spiritually, these two occurrences complement each other.

John, The Baptist announces Jesus is The Bridegroom and at The Cana Wedding gives a sign that The Bridegroom has come to announce a *New Marriage Covenant*. Therefore, turning the water to wine shows this new wine is better than *The Old Covenant*. Christ then goes to **the house** where God dwells and finds it is **corrupted**. Jesus came as **The Bridegroom** and finds His **Bride**, Judah, had transgressed His Father's house where **the wedding** is to take place. This is the **spiritual significance** which takes place in the beginning of John's *Gospel* (John 1-3).

The Samaritan Woman

The next event in John 4 is with the Samaritan woman but again it is not in chronological order as **The Synoptic Gospel**, but **in the spiritual order** as Jesus fulfilled **His spiritual ministry**.

In summary, John, The Baptist announces the coming of Jesus as The Bridegroom. Christ performs the miracle at Cana and chases

out the money changers for corrupting **The House** of His Father. Judah has corrupted herself with an **agreement** made with **the fourth beast**, Rome, in a treaty with Julius Caesar in 67-70 B.C. This, not only allowed Rome to rule over them but their religion also.

Judah, as part of The Roman Empire, now allows Rome to accept control over them by appointing Herod as King and the **high priest** in **the temple**. Judah, God's people, were to be God's **righteous witnesses** to the world, but they were joined with the fourth beast of Daniel 2.

So, Jesus turns to another nation. Christ relates a parable in Matthew 21:32-43 when He reveals The Jews did not believe John, The Baptist and never repented, so He gave this parable. God has a vineyard and left it in care of the stewards. They continually corrupted the vineyard, so God kept sending servants or Prophets for the care of His vineyard. Then, they killed The Prophets, so as a last resort, God sent His only Son and they killed Him as well.

Because Judah has not witnessed **righteousness**, but instead unrighteousness by bribery and corruption, they are under the curse of Malachi. **“Therefore say I unto you, The Kingdom of God shall be taken from you [Judah], and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof”** (Matthew 21:43).

Jesus turns to The Samaritans. Why The Samaritans and not The Gentiles? Remember, the capitol of The Ten Lost Tribes is in Samaria and The Ten Lost Tribes called Israel were taken captive by Assyria.

Once in Assyria, The Ten Lost Tribes of Israel are mixed into all the Gentile nations. Then while in captivity, among The Gentiles,

they eventually lose their identity as Israelites. They no longer knew they were The Bride. That is why Jesus turned to Samaria, the old Israelite capitol, which was now composed mostly of Gentiles. Christ meets a Samaritan woman at the well who was married 5 times and Jesus tells her that her present husband is not her real husband. This is a “**type**” of Israel, The Ten Lost Tribes, who married Gentiles and intermixed. Jesus then tells this Gentile woman He is The Christ. She runs to the town and when they meet Jesus they acknowledge He is The Christ. They, therefore, prove to be more fruitful and faithful by the act of believing Jesus. It is at this time He turns to The Gentiles who are intermixed with The Lost Tribes of Israel. He tells the Samaritan woman, who has no husband, that the day is coming when **the temple** they worship in (in Jerusalem and in Samaria) **will cease**. Ultimately, she will repent and become married to her True Husband, Christ.

New Covenant Introduced

Jesus, The Christ, makes an amazing announcement! In John 4:22-24 he declared, “**Ye worship ye know not what.**” The Ten Lost Tribes of Israel now believed they were Gentiles, not knowing God. “**We [Jews] know what we worship [God’s House – the temple]: for salvation [Christ] is of the Jews.**” Israel is God’s Bride and must become spiritual Israel (Romans 11).

Jesus then shows **the leaving** of God’s “**spirit**” from Judah to The Gentiles which includes The Lost Ten Tribes of Israel. “**But the hour [time] cometh, and now is [a transition], when the true worshippers shall worship The Father in “spirit” and in “truth” for The Father seeketh such to worship him**” (John 4:23).

God is a Spirit and they that worship Him must worship Him “**in**

spirit” and **“in truth.”**

Going to a new nation, The Gentiles, where The Lost Tribes of Israel had located, Christ introduces *The New Covenant*. No more **human effort** of The Works of The Law or any religious system of worshipping God as the Samaritans had been doing. Actually, they really didn't know what they were worshipping.

Jesus prophesies the end of *The Old Covenant* when **temple worship** ceases with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Judah had 40 years from 30 A.D. Christ's ministry to the fall of **the temple** in 70 A.D. before *The Old Covenant* vanished (Hebrews 8:13). This was Judah's time of testing before **the curse** in Malachi 4.

From this event God only wants worshippers to be Christians who worship God **“in spirit”** and **“truth.”** *The Old Covenant* ceases and now **salvation** could only be attained by God's **“spirit.”**

God dwells **“in you”** through Christ and you are now God's **“temple”** where God dwells through His Holy Spirit.

The Old Covenant had The Jews worshipping in **the temple** keeping The Works of The Law, which only pictured Christ. This is the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenant*. The Lost Tribes of Israel were scattered among The Gentiles. Now, *The New Covenant* goes to The Gentiles where the The Lost Tribes were scattered.

John 5, John 6 And John 7

These *gospel chapters* cover **“the very work”** Christ and His Father do DAILY even on The Sabbath (John 5:17). God and Christ, everyday, work **“the work”** of **salvation** (Hebrews 3).

As long as one does good works, to witness Christ, even on The Sabbath, it is permitted. Jesus and His Father constantly do **good works**, seven days a week, to **save the world** (I John 4:14). That is why Christ came into the world, to bring peace on earth and goodwill to all men (Luke 2:9-14).

Jesus can do nothing, but it is God, The Father who does everything and has committed all **judgment** to The Son (John 5).

Christ then discloses **the two resurrections, first at His second coming** and then The White Throne Judgment.

Christ summarizes His “**words**” and states all that He is preaching in John 5, 6 and 7 is God’s “**work**” which is **to believe on Him** (Christ) whom God hath sent. Jesus is God’s Son (John 6:29). Ending the summary of The Son and The Father’s “**works**,” Jesus stands up on the last day of The Feast of Tabernacles, (a type of The New Heaven and New Earth) and states, “**If any man** [“the world”] **thirst, let him come unto me** [Christ], **and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living waters**” (John 7:37-38). Then Jesus refers to The Holy Spirit which hadn’t been given as yet.

Christ concludes **His spiritual work** with The Father by God’s Holy Spirit and offering His Holy Spirit to **the world** at The Last Day of **the feast**, depicting God’s **kingdom** (Revelation 20-21). Everyone who was ignorant, foolish or wouldn’t keep growing **spiritually**, as God commanded, have their chance of **salvation** on The Last Great Day.

John’s **Gospel** is the only one of the *four gospels* which refer to The Holy Days as Jewish Feasts because by the time of the writing of *The Fourth Gospel*, The Gentiles were excluded from being

circumcised or keeping the “**works**” of The Law. The Holy Days, with **the temple** existing, still sought God in worshipping in **the temple** since *The Old Covenant* was still in force with Judah until **the temple** was destroyed.

John's *Gospel* was a **spiritual gospel** introducing *The New Covenant* to the world. Of a truth, Jesus proved by His living *The Torah* and by doing miracles, the unbelievers would see it as a sign. At the same time Jesus was also teaching His Disciples about God's “**work.**”

In John's *Gospel* Jesus fulfilled “**the works,**” which God called Him to do as a **faithful witness**. John 8 through the last chapter in John, shows the example you must follow when you are called to be a faithful witness (Acts 1:8).

CHAPTER 25

DEATH AND LIFE

Paul said The Letter of The Law leads to death but The Spirit of The Law leads to life (II Corinthians 3). Why does keeping The Letter of The Law lead to death and The Spirit to life?

Can Doctrine Change?

Some believe the word “**doctrine**” is “**holy**” and “**unchangeable.**” In Acts 15 **the church** changed its doctrine and Gentiles no longer had to become proselytes by being circumcised and keeping The Law. They received God’s Holy Spirit without becoming Jews. God revealed Gentiles could become **spiritual** Israelites without “**human works.**” In Christ, no longer is one a Jew, a Gentile, male or female, but a Son of God. The Greek word for “doctrine” is “didache” which means “**a learning.**” “Doctrine” is what one teaches or learns. It is not a holy word, it is a teaching. Spiritual growth requires change.

Different doctrines can be true, false or allow you to grow. You must keep growing in “**the grace and knowledge of our Lord, Jesus.**” “Doctrine” is always “**the truth**” which allows you to grow and have greater meaning.

True doctrine is a process. That is why Isaiah’s prophecy stated Christ would come and magnify The Law (Isaiah 42:21). In Hebrew the word “magnify” is “to enlarge and to make The Law **honorable**” or “to make it superior.”

Principles Of Christ

The Apostle Paul tells Christians: “**Therefore leaving the PRINCIPLES of the doctrine of Christ, let us go unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of the resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permit**” (Hebrews 6:1-3).

Biblical proof allows you to grow from one doctrine of teaching to another. Your spiritual insight becomes deeper and deeper until you achieve **perfection in the resurrection**. Being **holy** like God and Christ is the goal, but “**doctrine**” or “**teaching**” is a process. That is why it is called “**spiritual growth**.” God wants you to become **perfect** like Christ.

Repentance From Dead Works

The first principle of **the doctrine** or **teaching** about Christ is **repentance from dead works**. What are “**the dead works**” from which you are to repent? When you repent it is because of sin. “**Sin is the transgression of the law**” (I John 3:4). There is something about repenting from sin or breaking The Law which is a “**dead work**.” What is it?

Since The Law is the Hebrew word “Torah” you need to know what *The Bible* means by “**Torah**.”

What Is The Torah?

The age-old debate among Christians is “do they keep The Law?” There is absolutely nowhere in *The Bible* where it says Christians

should not keep The Law. In Galatians, Paul reveals Christians are not subject to “**the works**” of The Law. That is, they do not keep “**all the legalistic deeds**” of The Law. But that makes it sound like it is ALL RIGHT for Christians to SIN. Does *The Bible* give a definitive answer to the question? And why is The Torah called The Law?

The Wrong Argument

Abraham kept **the commandments, statutes** and Laws of God (Genesis 26:5). So The LAW was known long BEFORE Moses was born. Paul also makes an astounding statement in Galatians 3:17. “**And this I say, that the Covenant [Abrahamic], that was confirmed before of God in Christ, THE LAW, which was four hundred thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.**”

This sounds like a contradiction. If The Law came four hundred and thirty years after The Abrahamic Covenant, then how did Abraham know to keep The Law? The Law doesn't seem to make sense. What is the answer? Check *The Bible* further. Then to make matters worse read Galatians 3:19. “**Wherefore then [serve] The Law? It was ADDED because of transgressions [SINS], TILL THE SEED SHOULD COME to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.**”

The word “serve” in this verse is not found in any of the early manuscripts. It was “**added**” in later translations. The real question being asked in the original is: “**Wherefore then The LAW?**” That is **the real biblical question** or why have The Law at all? How can you “**ADD something**” to “**something that already exists?**” Plainly, Paul states The Law “**was added**” to something. For certain it **could not** have **been added** to itself. The Law can't

be added to “**a law**” already existing. This Law given to Moses had to be added to something which ALREADY EXISTED, but what “**was added**” had to be different. Read Verse 19 again. Whatever **was added, was added** because of sin when Israel built the golden calf. But this addition was only to last **until Christ came**.

Christ was **the promised seed** in The Abrahamic **covenant** to **restore paradise**. Then Paul answers the question about the added part. “**Wherefore the Law was our SCHOOLMASTER to BRING US UNTO CHRIST, that we might be JUSTIFIED by FAITH**” (Galatians 3:24). So, something was ADDED to The Law which was different from what was known about The Law four hundred thirty years **earlier** in Abraham’s day.

What Was Added?

You already read the answer. The part which was ADDED to The Law, which did not previously exist in The Law, was that PART which was a SCHOOLMASTER which would be able to LEAD YOU TO CHRIST. EVERYTHING THAT WAS “SHADOWED” OR LED YOU TO JESUS, THE CHRIST WAS ADDED. IT was a SCHOOLMASTER. Paul calls these additions “WORKS” (“ER-GON”) or “DEEDS” OF THE LAW. So many have attempted to answer, but this time let Christ give you the answer. In Hebrew the word for “**works**” is rendered “**commands**.” If you read or write down whenever Paul used the word “**works**” and inserted “**commands**” then it would read, “**why keep The Commands of The Law?**”

What kind of “**commands**” or “**deeds?**” Those “**commands**” in The Law which pointed to the schoolmaster, Christ. When Jesus came, all those “**legal works**” or “**commands**” ceased. Why?

Jesus Gives The Answer

In Matthew 5:17 Jesus said, “**Think not that I come to DESTROY THE LAW, OR THE PROPHETS: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.**”

In Greek, the word “plero” means “to entirely make full.” In English, the one word “fulfill” would be defined as “COMPLETE.” Christ plainly said He did not come to destroy The Law OR THE PROPHETS, but to “**complete**” them. But how? Many read these verses but miss the CONTEXT. Jesus did not refer only to The Law but also The Prophets. So there is something in The Law and The PROPHETS that Jesus was going “to complete” or “bring to its totality.” What was that? If you will allow *the scripture* to interpret itself instead of reading with a pre-set agenda, the biblical answer is **clear**.

Read Jesus disclosing *The New Covenant* in The Law or *Torah* as well as The Prophets. Then Jesus states He came to **complete** The Law and The PROPHETS. “**For verily I say unto you, TILL HEAVEN and EARTH PASS, one jot or one tittle shall in NO WISE PASS FROM THE LAW, TILL ALL BE FULFILLED**” [Fully filled or when all things are completed].

How clear, at the time of The New Heaven and Earth, a certain part of The LAW does “cease.” But how? It ceases when it is “FULFILLED.” In what way does The Law cease?

Remember there is something different about *The Torah* or LAW that is a PROCESS. Something in The Law and Prophets discloses something which happens. Jesus in His parting “**words**” to His Disciples said: “**These are the words which I spoke unto you, while I was yet with you, THAT ALL THINGS MUST BE**

FULFILLED, which were WRITTEN *in* the Law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and in the Psalms, CONCERNING ME" (Luke 24:44).

There is your **biblical** answer. Jesus tells you everything in The Law, PROPHETS and PSALMS concerning HIM must be **COMPLETED**. **Everywhere you read the word "FULFILL" in *The New Testament***, as in Luke 24:44, "**the word**" or "**FULFILL**" is "**to complete.**" In Greek it is "PLERO" or "PLEROMA."

This is exactly what Paul said The Law was supposed to do in Galatians 3:24. "**Wherefore The Law was OUR SCHOOLMASTER to *bring us unto Christ, that we might be JUSTIFIED BY FAITH.***" Christ and Paul declared The Law and The Prophets were written to prove Jesus was The Christ. Jesus was God's very Son as The Law and Prophets revealed.

When that part of The Law or PROPHETS was **completed**, you no longer could regard it as PROPHECY, but it then became HISTORY. The Prophets and this part of The Law were "completed" or "fulfilled" and NO LONGER APPLIED. The jot and tittle of The Law or Prophets were "**fulfilled**" or "**complete.**" When Jesus was sacrificed as The Paschal Lamb, Christians no longer sacrifice. Jesus already "fulfilled" or "completed" that part of The Law.

Read Paul's answer following The Law's purpose. "**But after that FAITH IS COME [HAPPENS], WE ARE NO LONGER UNDER A SCHOOLMASTER**" (Galatians 3:25).

There is your **biblical** definition for "**under The Law.**" It is **everything** that **pointed to Christ which** was completed. Every JOT and TITTLE of The Law and PROPHETS must be "completed" or

“fulfilled” when it occurs as **prophecy** and then when finished it becomes known as **history**. So declares **God’s “word.”**

Paul, completing Galatians 3, then reveals once you are baptized you are one of God’s children. Now, HAVING PUT “ON CHRIST” and you are no longer Jews or Greeks, male or female, you are not under any Old Covenant. You are now HEIRS according to the PROMISE made to Abraham. You have received **your inheritance** (Ephesians 1:13-14). The Abrahamic **promise of The Law or Torah** must be “completed” or “fulfilled” and Jesus in Matthew 5, 6 and 7 gives the entire answer. Read those chapters how Jesus changes The Letter of The Law to The Spirit of The Law (II Corinthians 3). The letter or written Law produces DEATH but The SPIRIT of The Law produces LIFE, which is SALVATION. How **clear**, how **biblically simple**. The Law is now transferred from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*, which becomes a **spiritual matter**. The Law is **spiritual and always exists** (Romans 7:14). The part which “**was added**” because of sin reveals Christ. **When Jesus completes The Prophecy, it is over and is history.** *The Old Covenant* never makes anyone “**perfect**” and never “**saves**” anyone. That is why Paul says “**the letter**” gives death. Doing The Letter gives a good, physical life, but The Works of The Law can never FORGIVE SIN (Hebrews 10). Read the full chapter. Only *The New Covenant* gives SALVATION through Christ. Christ completes The Letter of The Law about Him and puts **The Torah Law on a higher standard.**

Law Of Moses Added

What “was added” is The Law of Moses and all its “physical works” or legal “deeds.” The Law of Moses cannot be the same Law that Abraham kept in Genesis 26:5. Why not? They could not be the same since Paul said The Law of Moses was *added* 430

years after Abraham. What “**was added**” to The Commandments and Statutes had to be different. What was different with The Law of Moses?

Deuteronomy 5:2-3 states, “**The Lord our God made a COVENANT with us [Israel] in Horeb. The Lord MADE NOT THIS COVENANT with OUR FATHERS, but with us, even us [Israel], who are ALL OF US [Israel] here alive this day.**”

There is your **biblical answer**. This Covenant was not made with Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and was different in some way than The Commandments and Statutes in Genesis 26:5. The Covenants, in The Law or *The Torah* such as Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were DIFFERENT than The Law of Moses “**added**” to *The Torah*. All these Covenants are in The Law or *The Torah*. In Hebrew, “*The Torah*” is the “teaching or learning **a pathway**” or “**the way** to Christ.” *The Torah* is far more than *The Old Covenant* “**added**” to *The Torah*. *The Torah* is a **way** to **salvation** or Christ. Christ is *The Torah*. *The Torah* is “**the schoolmaster**” to Jesus. *The Old Covenant* was only “**a shadow**” of good things to come (Colossians 2:6-17).

How was it different? First, it was only made with Israel and not The Gentiles. That is why **the church** in Acts 15 stated The Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law. Read all of Acts 15. Secondly, it was *The Old Covenant* that was *added* to *The Torah*. This Old Covenant “**was added**” because of “**sin**” and that is why Paul said The Law was made for the UNRIGHTEOUS (I Timothy 1:9-10).

The Law of Moses was added to The Torah four hundred thirty years after Abraham. *The Torah* is “**a pathway**” or “**the way to salvation.**” Once **the shadows** of good things to come “**occurred,**”

they, then, became the past or history. (That is EXACTLY what Christ said in Matthew 5, 6 and 7).

The Spiritual Torah

Jesus, The Christ, clearly stated, “**For I say unto you, That except YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL EXCEED *the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of heaven***” (Matthew 5:20). This is very plain! The scribes and Pharisees commanded the keeping of *The Old Covenant* only to Israel and proselytes who were circumcised and kept The Letter of The Law.

Then Jesus defines in the rest of Matthew 5 what being “**more righteous**” really means. The Law of Moses with its **legalistic works** and **commands** could never give you **SALVATION**. Why? Keeping The Letter of The Law **NEVER CHANGES HUMAN NATURE**. It is too weak to be able to change human nature.

A Higher Standard Of The Torah

To be in **the kingdom** of heaven one must be **PERFECT**, as Christ concluded in Matthew 5:48. The Law of Moses could never make anyone perfect, but as Christ clearly said, *The New Covenant* could.

Now, *The Torah*, that is predicated UPON FAITH like Abraham, makes a Christian **RIGHTEOUS** or **PERFECT**. All the added prophecies which pointed to Christ as better things to come, once they occurred, Christians are no longer commanded to observe them. They are history. Now, it is the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** of *The TORAH LAW WHICH IS WRITTEN IN THEIR HEARTS (DESIRES)* and **MINDS (TRUTH)**.

Christ is Your Passover Lamb. He has made everyone unleavened as long as you are “in Christ” and you have received The Holy Spirit (inheritance) and Jesus has **ATONED** you to God. All The Holy Days and what they shadow are history for Christians. They are not required for salvation.

Does that mean you no longer can memorialize The Holy Days? Of course not! That is why Paul told Gentile Christians (I Corinthians 5) how to keep **the feast** in **SINCERITY** (honesty) and **TRUTH**. The Feast of Unleavened Bread is for Christians to be **SINLESS** and not like the fornicator. That is the context. Christians to be **SAVED** are on a higher standard of **KEEPING THE TORAH LAW** by The Law completed or fulfilled in their **HEARTS AND MINDS!** With Christians all the added deeds of The Law are “completed” in Christ. All the legal shadows are now spiritually kept “in Christ.” Now, in *The New Covenant*, *The Torah* is a spiritual matter and kept on a higher standard in your heart and mind. Christians must be like Christ and that is to be sinless. That is called **spiritual growth**.

Chapter 26

PURPOSE OF SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS

Did you know all Christians who know The True God and His Son, Jesus can also be spiritually blinded? In I Corinthians 13:12, The Apostle Paul, who received more revelations than the other Apostles, declared he was spiritually blind. Paul said, “For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: Now I [Paul] know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.”

How clear even Paul didn't have all **the truth**. Peter himself said that in his day they had a more sure word of prophecy than The Prophets of old (II Peter 1:19). All Christians are blind to some truth and therefore, need to grow. That is why John wrote in Revelation 18:4 for God's people to come out of Babylon or **spiritual blindness**.

Cause And Purpose

Why does God want any individual to be **spiritually blind**, let alone Christians? What is the reason God allows **spiritual blindness and** what causes a person to be **spiritually blind**? *The Scriptures* will reveal the answer.

Truth And Healing

Once someone understands The Truth of God, then **Jesus** must do something. “**For this people's** [Judah] **heart** [desire] **is waxed**

gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and *their* eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I [Jesus] should heal them” (Matthew 13:15).

Once a point of truth is understood, humans naturally want to change, but only **God**, through **Christ**, must heal them!

As long as humans do not know better, God leaves them alone! Once converted and knowing **the truth** Jesus will save you. All those which God has given to Jesus – not “**one**” is ever lost (John 5). Now you understand why God allows the ignorant or foolish to be blind. If they don't know better and want to stay in that state, God leaves them alone. Why?

Paul reveals God has **an order** or **a plan** in just how He plans to **save** each one (I Corinthians 15:23). God has a plan or strategy as to how He is to **save** the world. Read Ephesians 1.

To discover why God wants so many to remain blind until later, read about how Jesus healed a blind man. The Jews said no one knows who this Jesus is and then let the blind man go. When the blind man, who once could not see, acknowledged that Jesus was The Son of God, this is what Christ said. **“For judgment I am come into this world, that they...which see might be made blind”** (John 9:39).

Wow! Jesus was saying those who understood that God was indeed the One God and The Messiah was His Son, they would become spiritually blind. God intentionally allowed them to be blind again. God is “**the one**” who decides who He will blind and who will understand the truth. So God chose “some” to be **spiri-**

tually blinded.

Why would God want to blind so many humans? Here is Christ's answer. **"If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, we see, therefore your sins remaineth"** (John 9:41).

God's **"love"** blinds those who are **"not ready"** to be **saved**, so that when they sin God will not hold them responsible. Oh, the love of God! God removes **spiritual blindness** when a person is ready to be **saved** according to God's **plan** and **order**. What is that order?

Spiritual Growth

When does God know a person is ready to receive more Godly knowledge and be able to grow **spiritually**? What does God say? **"Whom shall he teach knowledge"** (Isaiah 28:9)? The subject God is explaining is **"Godly knowledge"** and secondly **"to whom He will allow it to be revealed."** It is all a matter of **knowledge**. Everyone needs God's knowledge or truth. Since everyone is **spiritually blind**, at least in part, you must be super careful not to determine **"new spiritual truth"** before God actually is ready to reveal it to you. As humans, just like children think, you can do or know something when in reality you may not be **mature enough** to understand what you are learning. How many times have you heard children say, "I can do that?"

How can you know you are ready to grow more and understand more of the truth? God answers, **"Whom shall he [God] teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? [teaching] *them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts*"** (Isaiah 28.9). There is God's answer. Unless you stay childlike or as a baby and only grow from mother's milk you cannot eat meat. This is very plain.

You can not use your own interpretations based on your human heart or desire to be right (Job 40:8). Job, a righteous man, had to learn that lesson!

God's answer to Job may help you, "**Wilt thou also disannul my judgment? Wilt thou condemn me, that thou mayest be righteous**" (Job 40:8)? As long as Christians think they are **right** and have a heart whose desire is to be right, you are not able to seek God's **righteousness**. This truth applies to **ALL HUMANS**.

Whether one be ignorant, a fool or a Christian seeking to be "**self right**," God will not open more of His knowledge.

Read how simply Solomon, a man of wisdom, states it. "**Through DESIRE a man, having separated himself** [self interpretation], **seeketh** [desire] **and intermeddleth with all wisdom**" (Proverbs 18:1). There it is.

Seeking **to be self-right**, because of your desire or your motivation **to be right**, keeps God from giving you His knowledge, because you will misunderstand it because **you want to be self-right**. That is what Paul calls **human imagination or interpretation** (II Corinthians 10:5).

God reveals Christian **truth** only comes from your heavenly mother, Jerusalem, in Heaven. (Galatians 4:26).

It is God's "**milk**" or "**word**" given **by Him** and not your human imagination. Truth or God's knowledge can only come from Him personally, by milk or truth from His breast, right from God's Holy Spirit.

God does not want you to know His truth or knowledge until He knows you are ready. If you understand God's truth and you sin against His "**word**" you are not forgiven unless you repent. You need to be like a

baby, only drinking in or desiring in your heart – God’s **truth**. God does not want you to transgress His “word” because then sin remains with you. You must constantly be in a repentant state or as a little babe who believes God in your heart. Then God reveals more truth of His “**holy knowledge**.” To think you may have had **the truth** while no one else has or you are the only one to have all **the truth** is not like a babe always seeking truth from God in repentance.

That is the Christian dilemma. Spending most of your *Bible* study time just proving **what you may already believe and not seeking to learn God’s truth**. Unless you stay as a babe, God will not reveal more knowledge. **He loves you** and doesn’t want you to be held responsible until you mature enough to be able “**to do**” what **new truth** you are beginning to understand. The worst thing God can do is ask you to do something you are not mature enough to handle. God does not increase your talents until your heart is right. Then God reveals more spiritual truth to you.

Romans 14:23 states, “**Whatsoever is not of faith is sin.**” Whatever you believe in your heart, you had better do. God holds you responsible for what **truth** you do know and not what you do not know. For example, if a Christian believes you are not to drink wine, you should not drink wine around them or push drinking upon them. Even though **the truth** is, Christians can drink wine but only “**in moderation**.” You must not insist others do so when they are not spiritually ready. Whatsoever is **not of faith is sin**. It is all right to drink **moderately** but not for Christians when they are not **spiritually ready**. That is why Christians are not to offend anyone. It is a matter of **personal faith** for each individual. Now to see *The Bible’s* answer as to the cause of **spiritual blindness**.

You are continually to have the **mind** of Christ (Philippians 2:5). What is **The Mind of Christ**? Read the rest of Philippians 2. You will see,

to be able to have Christ's **mind**, you must be **servants to others**. You must always think what is good for the other and not yourself. That is **The Mind of Christ**.

Jesus constantly spoke God's "**words**" only and never His own. Read John 5.

You are now ready to understand why God blinds mankind **spiritually** which includes Christians. Your Father loves you and does not want to pass more Godly knowledge to you until you are mature enough (as Jesus was) to handle it (Ephesians 4:12-18).

Cause Of Blindness

You now understand why God allows you to be spiritually blind, but what is the root cause of a person's blindness?

Jude makes a remarkable statement in Jude 23. Jude is referring to helping people avoid The Lake of Fire or Gehenna. "**And others save with fear, pulling *them* out of the fire**" [How]? "**hating even the garment [our bodies] spotted by the flesh.**" It is your human nature. It is the survival of "the fittest attitude" in your carnal or beastly heart which is the culprit.

Prophetically, John writes in Revelations 19:8, "**the saints**" The Bride of Christ, are clothed when they are no longer human but completely spirit. "**For the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.**" Why linen? Because linen, commanded in The Law to be worn by The Priesthood, are clothes which do not make you perspire. That is the reason. Saints as "spirits" now are Holy like God and His Son, Jesus.

The problem is **the flesh**, which is full of toxins and poisons, especially when your bodies get old or in decay from diseases. Jesus warns if you

try to save your human life you will lose it. If you willingly lose your life you will live eternally. So, human nature causes humans to be **spiritually blind**. Jesus, The Christ, reveals how you will stay spiritually blind.

Pulls Of The Flesh

To have **spiritual growth** you must deny “the flesh.” Your garment must not be defiled by the flesh.

Jesus said there are four types of individuals. Three of them continue being spiritually blind because in living this life they are too involved in this world. The fourth group is different, but how?

The parable of the sower and the seed disclose the cause of spiritual blindness. The four types of individuals are revealed in Matthew 13: 18-30:

- 1 When someone hears the “Word” about God’s kingdom, Satan sees to it they are too involved with their human existence. Family always needs their attention and survival is an issue and always trying to be productive in this life. Then just trying to have fun, attempting to relax from the stresses of life. Satan usually wins and that person isn’t even interested in God or His kingdom.**
- 2 The second type of individual hears and likes what they hear, but others make fun of them and persecution or taunting derails them from seeking God.**
- 3 This person is too involved in the world. Getting married, becoming famous, getting rich, having children**

or spending endless hours attempting to make a business succeed are just too much to deal with. It doesn't take too much to become offended or lose interest in God and His kingdom.

- 4 **This group places God's kingdom above everything in this life. No matter what their earthly desires may be, they want to pray, study their Bibles and do everything they can to be in God's kingdom. Notice what Jesus said, "But seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness; and all these [earthly] things will be added unto you" (Matthew 6:33).**

Please be aware your human desires are not wrong or a sin as long as you keep God and His **kingdom** first!

It is all a matter of **faith**. If you have that **faith**, then God adds those human needs which are **good** for you, just as He blessed Abraham, father of the **faithful**. Hopefully, now you can see the fine line which can cause **spiritual blindness**.

Jobitis

There is one more human desire which is the most deceptive of all and Satan is a good example.

Jesus warns Christians that those who know **the most truth** are held more responsible in The White Throne Judgment than those who are ignorant or foolish like the first three in the parable of "**the sower and the seed**." What does Jesus warn those Christians? "**And that servant [Christian], which knew his Lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not [ignorant and foolish], and did commit things**

worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more” (Luke 12:47-48).

This is what **spiritual blindness** is all about.

God’s “**love**” will keep you **blinded** by following your earthly pursuits when you don’t put God **first** in your life. Why? **Because they are not held responsible for their sins!** Atheists and agnostics are safer than Christians in **the final judgment**. That is why those in Sodom and Gomorrah plead their case and might win their case over Christians who do not grow spiritually. God is always just and fair.

God made sure an entire book was written in *The Bible* about one person and that person was Job. Why? Since Job was righteous, he wanted to judge God and God’s justice system. God warned Job not to seek his own righteousness but only God’s righteousness (Job 40:8).

Knowing God’s “**word**” or having **the truth** is a great responsibility, as you will be held responsible for what knowledge was given you in **The Great Judgment**.

God warns you to be careful with His “**word**” and stay as a babe seeking **milk** and not your own interpretations or imaginations based upon your fleshly desire to be right.

God loves all the world and wants to save everyone who has ever been born (I John 4:14). That is why He sent His Son to save you. Make diligent effort (desire) and pray to seek God’s knowledge and not your own.

CHAPTER 27

THE MALACHI CURSE

To understand the rest of *The New Testament*, from *Romans* to *Revelation*, you must address the coming curse in Malachi. The Jews rejected The Messiah, Jesus, The Christ and John, The Baptist. Since the hearts of the children did not return to The Fathers of old like Noah, Abraham, Isaac or Jacob, God declared He would curse the earth (Malachi 4:6).

The Coming Curse

The entire *Book of Malachi* warns of the **coming curse**. The Jews rejected God, so He had to restore God's Holy and **righteous** Law with **the statues** and **judgments** (Malachi 4:4).

This Law was The Law of Moses which "was added" to *The Torah* because of both John, The Baptist and Christ. Israel was sinning when they built **the golden calf**. This *Old Covenant* was exclusively made only with Israel since they were to be God's righteous witnesses to the world (Deuteronomy 5:2-3). That is why Jesus came to only Israel first and then to The Gentiles.

John, The Baptist, as Elijah, came to prepare **the way** for Christ, the second messenger who was to restore The Law of Moses and cleanse **the temple** (Malachi 3:1). They killed both messengers and the curse was now a **prophetic reality**. From Christ's ministerial commission, God gave Judah 40 years to repent before

the curse would go into force. Those 40 years ended in 70 A.D. with the destruction of **the temple** by Titus. God would no longer dwell with Judah as His people, but turn to a nation more worthy by building a **spiritual temple** in each person growing in Christianity.

God now added Gentiles into **the olive tree** of Israel and only a remnant of Israel would be included as God's **witnesses**. Now Israel and The Gentiles are to be God's witnesses to the world (Romans 11:24).

Judah rejected The Messiah and the opportunity for The Millennium Kingdom of God to begin. The **coming curse** reveals what Christians will have to endure as His witness. "**Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword**" (Matthew 10:34).

This statement by Jesus relates to sending out The 12 Apostles to **the lost sheep of Israel**, instead of bringing peace to the world, which was His purpose (Matthew 10:6). When He comes the second time, He comes as **a refiner's fire** (Malachi 3:2). "**But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's sope: And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness. Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the Lord, as in the days of old, and as in former years**" (Malachi 3:2-4).

Now **the curse** of the world is to begin and will last until the earth is purged at The Battle of Armageddon. Instead of **peace** and The Millennium Kingdom, the curse must first cleanse the earth with

all its inhabitants. Then, and only then, will peace come to the earth with God's **kingdom** rule for 1000 years. Jesus describes how this curse begins and what will occur before Christ is **to return** and establish His Father's **kingdom** which will bring peace.

Curse Instituted

Jesus prophetically relates how **the curse** will come about in Matthew 24:1-31, Mark 13:1-31 and Luke 21:1-31. Use the account in Matthew to discover the events which will transpire when the world is being cursed.

Many believe the specific events relate to the future, but **the curse** begins with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Read all of Matthew.

The Disciples came to Jesus to show Him the buildings of **the temple**.

- 1 **The first event Christ prophesied is that “in the buildings of the temple, not one stone would be left upon another.” This is the beginning of the curse which started in 70 A.D. by Titus. Exactly forty years was given to Judah to repent or return to The Old Testament fathers.**

- 2 **Too many disregard the next prophecy as if this is yet in everyone's future. Notice Jesus warns His Disciples, during their lives, that many shall come in Christ's name, including Christian ministers and shall say or preach Jesus is The Christ, but shall deceive many.**

Jesus was not referring to the far future but He explicitly warned His Disciples, **“Take hold that no man deceive you.”** Who did

He warn about false preachers? Those Disciples, The Apostles of His day that deceptive ministers would exist in **the church** in their day (Acts 20:29-31). The **sign** of the coming **curse** is first the destruction of **the temple**, followed by ministers of the gospel who would be speaking another gospel.

As you continue to read *God's Story*, you will see this second sign of the curse is when Satan infiltrates God's church with deceptive ministers, with some claiming to be Jewish Apostles like the original ones. These satanic deceivers bring heresy into God's **church** and cause SEPARATION OR SCHISM in God's **church**. Later chapters will prove Christ's prophecy.

- 3 **Then Jesus gives a general future condition of the world's curse. Worldwide, there will be violence, famines and earthquakes. Christ states these are merely the beginning of world sorrow. Until The Return of Jesus bringing world peace, everyone will have natural chaos and continual fighting or war. Nation will fight nation and finally kingdom against kingdom or world wars. Notice the cause.**
- 4 **Christianity will be blamed for the world's violence and be persecuted. That is why Emperor Nero blamed The Christians for the burning of Rome. History declares most wars are caused because of religion. Hitler blamed The Jews for the troubles of the world.**

Then Jesus declares if Christians remain faithful to the death, they will receive salvation. Why? Because in spite of persecution *The Gospel* still will be preached to the world.

- 5 **Notice, Jesus returns to His own time and warns His**

Disciples that, “When ye [disciples] therefore shall see the abomination of the desolation, spoken of by Daniel, The Prophet, stand in the holy place, then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains” (Matthew 24:15-16). This is specific. First, it applies to those alive at the time of Christ, His Disciples and Jews. Secondly, the abomination of desolation is placed in the existing temple of their day in The Holy Place. This all occurred when Titus placed Jupiter Olympus in The Holy Place. Finally, Christ warns those of His day to flee to the mountains or to safety. This is what *The Bible* revealed.

- 6 After the temple’s destruction and Christians and Jews fled the city, a great tribulation takes place in the world. Jesus declares if this world curse was allowed to continue, no flesh would be saved. God will shorten the days at The Battle of Armageddon; otherwise, the world would commit suicide. Because of the elect’s sake, The Remnant of Israel and The Gentiles, (God’s two witnesses) Jesus makes an astounding statement! “Behold, I have told you before, Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he* is in secret chambers; believe it not” (Matthew 24:25-26).**

During this curse, **the great tribulation** starts with the destruction of Herod’s corrupt temple, which was called The Time of World Sorrows. Others, of course, will say He is coming in secret. Many will come predicting **The Return** of Christ, but He declares “**don’t believe it!**” No one, except The Father, knows The Time of Christ’s Return. **Jesus is not coming in secret!** Read how Jesus returns in Matthew 24:27. “**For as lightning cometh out**

of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be!”

The world's curse starts with the destruction of Herod's temple and lasts until Christ's **return** as a flash of lightening around the world for all to see!

This **ends the world's curse**. Jesus, The Christ restores world peace which was Christ's original purpose. Read about the end of The Great Tribulation or **curse of the world**.

Read Malachi 3:13-18. In Verse 13 God says, His people, The Jews, have been against Him and they don't understand why. In fact, they say it serves no purpose to follow God. In fact, the proud, the successful are better off than The Jews. They felt they were, and are always, persecuted and blamed for all the world's troubles.

But some Jews and Gentiles kept **faith** in God and feared or honored The One True God. Therefore, God declares, in that day, He will make up His “**jewels**” (Bride) and “spare them (from the curse) as a man spares his own son” (Malachi 3:16-17).

Great Tribulation Ends

“Then shall ye return [Israel], and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not” (Malachi 3:18). This refers to **the millennium** when Christ returns. **“For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven [heavenly chaos]; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly [mark of beast], shall be stubble: and the day that cometh [Christ's return] shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch (Mal-**

achi 4:1). This is The Second Great Tribulation mentioned in Revelation.

Jesus **returns** blazing with **the angels** and destroys the wicked at The Battle of Armageddon. Only ashes will be under the feet of the righteous during **the millennium**. Notice what occurs to Christians (Israelites and Gentiles, Christ's Bride). "**But unto you that fear [honor] my name shall the Sun [Christ] of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall. And you [The Bride] shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do *this*, saith the Lord of hosts**" (Malachi 4:2-3).

The Second Great Tribulation or the **curse on the world ends**. Now look what Jesus states as He returns. Then Christ refers to the carcasses of Malachi 4. "**For wheresoever [Armageddon] the carcass [wicked] is, there will the eagles [Bride] be gathered together [under Christ's wings]**" (Matthew 24:28). The curse or tribulation is over. In Malachi 4:6 is this Hebrew word for "curse" used. "Cherem" in Hebrew means "total destruction of what was to be holy." This cherem is used to take God's chosen people, who were to be holy and scatter them in the world as a curse.

With the end of the world curse or the tribulation Jesus closes His prophecy when the world curse ends that the heavens will shake and the sun and moon shall not shine and the stars will fall (Revelation 6). Then will appear **the sign of Christ's return** and the world will see The Return of Jesus with power and **glory** and they will mourn. Right at that time **the angels** of heaven will gather **the elect** (Christians) from all the earth (Matthew 24:29-31). **The millennium** of peace on earth begins.

This Generation

With the conclusion of this prophecy is the account of Luke 21:32. **“Verily, I say unto you [Disciples], this generation shall not pass away, till all is fulfilled.”** The Greek word for “fulfilled” is “pleroma” or in English, its meaning is “to complete.”

The curse or the tribulation was completed or in process by that generation which existed at the time Jesus gave this prophecy to His Disciples. Christ states this generation’s curse will not end until all is fulfilled (completed). Jesus answers the first question with the fall of the **temple** in 70 A.D. (Mark 13:1-4).

Now, to read the destruction of Herod’s Temple from *Acts* to *Revelation*.

CHAPTER 28

TWO GREAT TRIBULATIONS

You will find two great tribulations occur during the time of the world curse revealed in Malachi 4. The final tribulation is just before true world peace which starts the millennium (Malachi 4:1-2).

The Curse Defined

The Hebrew word “cherem” in English is translated “curse.” This is a special curse. The Hebrew word means “a holy thing which should be destroyed.” Why? It is destroyed because it is a corruption of what is **not** holy but should be Holy. Specifically, people are worshipping a corrupt idol. What needs to be destroyed? Jesus said one stone would not be left upon another (Matthew 24:2). The **temple** is first to be destroyed when the world curse begins. Why? The **temple**, God’s Holy House, has been made a place of merchandise or a business. This Holy Place had become corrupt and God’s “glory” left just before it’s total destruction between 67 and 70 A.D.

God declares, **“If ye will not hear, and if ye will not lay it to heart, to give glory unto my name, saith the Lord of Hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings: yea, I have cursed them already, because ye do not lay *it* to heart”** (Malachi 2:2).

Because Judah not only has corrupted The House of God, The

Temple, but they, themselves, have been corrupted as well. So, they are cursed, also.

The Hebrew word for “curse” in this case is “meerah” or in English it means “an excretion.” God will stop all their blessings, as well as destroy **the temple**. The Jews will be literally “excreted” from Jerusalem with **the temple’s** destruction. This tribulation starts in 70 A.D. and lasts until the curse ends with the final world tribulation. Then, Christ returns.

Christ told **the faithful** to flee Jerusalem because of the coming great tribulation (Matthew 24:16). With the destruction of **the temple**, Jesus had forewarned The Pharisees and Sadducees, “**Behold, your house, [the temple] is left unto you desolate**” (Matthew 23:38).

Before the desolation of **the temple**, Jesus states His real purpose for His coming. “**O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathered her chickens under her wings, and ye would not**” (Matthew 23:37).

The curse comes with **the temple’s** destruction and those who heeded Christ’s warning had fled Jerusalem for safety in the mountains. Christ warned that destruction of **the temple** and The City of Jerusalem was so bad, there had never been such a demise of a city with its inhabitants before, or ever will be (Matthew 24:21). This “**curse**” truly was an “excretion” of The Jews and their **temple** by Titus.

Jesus’ second warning was of **false preachers** before His **return** (Matthew 24:23-26). Suddenly, after the false ministers

and prophets “**prophecy**” of Christ’s **return**, Jesus brings out the “actual time frame” when He does return.

Too many miss the **false preachings** to start after the temple is destroyed. Then The Return of Jesus is told over and over again during the last two thousand years. Peter warns of this false teaching in II Peter 3:8-9.

Christ’s **return** can last thousands of years from the time of His death because it is God’s **purpose to save everyone**. God wants to give everyone their allocated time to seek Him so no one is lost. God’s “**will**” includes “**potential**” **Universal Salvation** (I Timothy 2:4). After **the false preachings** about The Return of Jesus with **the eagles** gathered together (Christians), there is a time of another great tribulation which ushers in the heavenly signs of Christ’s **return** (Matthew 24:27-29).

Read about this “**second**” Great Tribulation. “**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble, and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of Hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch**” (Malachi 4:1). Then “**the righteous**” will shine (The Bride) and tread those ashes under their feet.

The detailed account of this day can be read in Zechariah 14:1-7. This is The Battle of Armageddon. Notice what happens immediately after this period of great tribulation. Right after this **second tribulation** the heavenly signs begin and Jesus **returns** with **the angels** and **the saints** (Matthew 24:29-31).

The heavenly signs commence; everyone on earth is aware and acknowledges that God’s Day of Wrath has come (Revelation

6:12-17 and all of Revelation 7).

Revelation 7 reveals that 144,000 from The Tribes of Israel and the **innumerable multitude** of Gentiles from all nations receive **salvation**. One of the **twenty four elders** asks who these 144,000 of Israel and Gentiles are. The answer is these **saved individuals** just came out of The Great Tribulation. This is a **second** Great Tribulation after the **first tribulation**, which occurred back in 70-74 A.D. Can *The Bible* prove to you exactly who all these individuals are?

Two Persecutions

In Greek the word for “tribulation” is “thilipsis,” meaning “persecution,” “afflicted” or “anguish.” These **two tribulations** are a time of persecution for God’s people. Two times in history persecution of God’s people happens in The City of Jerusalem in 70 A.D. and will happen just before Armageddon (Zechariah 14). This second persecution happens just before **the seventh trumpet** sounds, which is The Return of Jesus.

Fifth Seal

Just before **the sixth seal** opens the heavenly signs, “**the fifth seal**” opens and what happens? “**And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls [lives] of them that were slain for the word of God, for the testimony [witness] which they held: And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until the fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they *were*, should be fulfilled**” (Revelation 6:9-11).

These are the **two persecutions** or **tribulations** but are **seasons apart** from each other. There are two different time periods for The Great Tribulation. There it is plainly revealed in God's "**word**" as Christ prophesied in Matthew 24.

Jesus prophetically relates how **the curse** will come about in Matthew 24:1-31, Mark 13:1-31 and Luke 21:1-31. You should use the account in Matthew to discover the events which will transpire when this world is being **cursed**.

There are many who believe there are specified events that will first take place, but never forget the curse began with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D.

- 1 Christ stated, when He prophesied about the building of **the temple**, that not one stone would be left upon another. This was the beginning of the curse, which started in 70 A.D. by Titus. Exactly forty years were given to Judah to **repent** or **return** to The Old Testament and their father's faith.
- 2 Some do not fully understand this prophecy was beginning in the lifetime of His Disciples. Notice, Jesus warns **His Disciples** that many shall come in His name, including Christian ministers preaching Jesus is The Christ and yet shall deceive many.

Jesus was not referring to the far future, but He explicitly warned His Disciples, "**Take hold that no man deceives you.**" Who did He warn about false preachers? He warned The Disciples and The Apostles of His day, that deceptive ministers would exist in **the church** during their life until He returned (Acts 20:29-31). The sign of the coming curse happened first at the destruction of **the temple** followed by **min-**

isters of *The Gospel* who would be speaking “**another gospel.**”

Later, you will see this second sign of the curse with which Satan infiltrates God's **church** with **deceptive ministers**, some claiming to be Jewish Apostles just like the original ones.

These **satanic deceivers** bring heresy into God's **church** and cause SEPARATION OR SCHISM in His **church**. This will be proved to you by Christ's prophecy. Then Jesus gives a general future condition of the world's curses. When you see violence, famines and earthquakes worldwide, these are merely the beginning of world sorrow or a curse. Until The Return of Jesus, bringing world peace, there will be natural chaos and continual fightings and war. Nation will fight nation and finally kingdom against kingdom will erupt in world wars. Notice the cause:

- 4 **Christianity will be blamed for the world's violence and be persecuted. Remember when Emperor Nero blamed Christians for the burning of Rome. History tells you most wars are caused because of religion. In recent history Hitler blamed Jews for all the troubles of the world. Then Jesus states if Christians remain faithful to the death, they will receive salvation. Why?** Because in spite of persecution *The Gospel* will be preached to the world.
- 5 Notice, Jesus speaks of His own time-frame when He warns His Disciples: “**When ye therefore shall see the abomination of the desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the Holy Place, then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains**” (Matthew 24:15-16). This is specific. First, it applies to those alive at the time of Christ, His Disciples and Jews. Secondly,

the abomination of desolation is placed in the existing **temple** of their day in The Holy Place. This all occurred when Titus placed Jupiter Olympus in The Holy Place. Finally, Christ warns those of His day, to flee to the mountains for their safety.

- 6 After **the temple's** destruction and Christians and Jews flee the city, the **great tribulation** takes place in the **world**. The world "**being cursed**" has continued to this very day. Jesus declares if this world curse was allowed to continue, "**no flesh would be saved alive.**" God must shorten **the days** at The Battle of Armageddon; otherwise, the world would commit suicide. It is because of the "**elects**" sake, The Remnant of Israel and The Gentiles, who are God's **two witnesses** will bring **The Return** of Jesus Christ. Then, Jesus makes an astounding statement! "**Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in secret chambers; believe it not**" (Matthew 24:26).

The great tribulation of the curse, which was called The Time of World Sorrows, began with the destruction of Herod's corrupt **temple**. Many will come predicting the different times of The Return of Christ or implying He is coming "**in secret.**" Jesus declares you should not **believe it!** No one knows **the time of Christ's return**. The only one who knows is God, The Father. **Jesus is not coming in secret!** "**For as lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**" (Matthew 24:27). So, Jesus will not come in secret.

The world "**curse**" starts with the destruction of Herod's Temple and

lasts until Christ's **return**, which will be as a flash of lightening around the world for **all to see!** Only then does this end "**the world's curse.**" Jesus, The Christ restores world peace. This was Christ's original purpose.

In Malachi 3:13 you see God relates how His people, The Jews, have been against Him and they just don't understand or want to follow Him. In fact, they say it serves no purpose to follow God. They feel the proud and the successful are better off than The Jews. They never forgot they have always been persecuted and blamed for the world's troubles.

But some Jews and Gentiles kept **faith** in God between each other and feared and honored The One True God. God declares, "**And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I will make up my Jewels [Bride]; and I will spare them [from the curse], as a man spares his own son**" (Malachi 3:16-17).

Great Tribulation Ends

"**Then shall ye return [Israel], and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not**" (Malachi 3:18).

This refers to **the millennium** when Christ **returns**. "**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven [heavenly chaos]; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly [mark of beast], shall be stubble: and the day that cometh [Christ's return] shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch**" (Malachi 4:1). This is The Second Great Tribulation mentioned in Revelation.

Jesus **returns** blazing with **the angels** and destroys the wicked at The

Battle of Armageddon. Only ashes will be under the feet of the righteous during **the millennium** with world peace. Notice what occurs to Christians, both Israelites and Gentiles who are, Christ's Bride: "**But unto you that fear [honor] my name shall the Sun [Christ] of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall; and you [The Bride] shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do *this*, saith the Lord of hosts**" (Malachi 4:2-3).

Then The Second Great Tribulation which ends the **curse** of the world. Christ is referring to the carcasses of Malachi 4, being under the feet of **the righteous**. "**For wheresoever [Armageddon] the carcass [wicked] is, there will the eagles [Bride] be gathered together [under Christ's wings as you read in Malachi]. The curse or tribulation is over** (Matthew 24:28).

With the end of the world **curse** or **the tribulation**, Jesus closes His prophecy that when the world curse ends, the heavens will shake and the sun and moon shall not shine and the stars will fall. Then, will appear the sign of Christ's **return** and the world will see The Return of Jesus coming with power and **glory** and they will mourn. **Right at that time the angels of heaven will gather the elect [Christians] from all the earth** (Matthew 24:29-31). The millennium of peace on earth **begins**.

This Generation

With the conclusion of this prophecy in the account of Luke 21:32, Jesus states, "**Verily, I say unto you [Disciples], this generation shall not pass away, till all is fulfilled.**" The Greek word for "fulfilled" is "pleroma" or in the English, the word means "to complete." The curse starts with Christ's generation and doesn't end until all takes place or is completed.

The whole **curse** or **the tribulation** was completed or in process by the generation which existed at the time Jesus gave this prophecy to His Disciples.

Now, you are ready to read from *Acts* to *Revelation* about the destruction of Herod's Temple.

CHAPTER 29

THE TWO MYSTERIES

The Bible is the story of two different mysteries. One is called The Mystery of God (Colossians 1:25-26). The other is called The Babylonian Mystery ruled by Satan, the god of this world (II Corinthians 4:4 and Revelation 17:5). Christ said, “You shall know them by their fruits.” Both mysteries have different outcomes. What are the differences?

In The Beginning

From the time of The Garden of Eden these two mysteries come from two different trees. One, The Tree of Life which leads to **salvation** and the other, The Tree of Good and Evil leads to death. Both of these trees contain mysteries and is secretly known by those who eat one tree or eat of the other tree.

It is very easy to tell which tree produces good fruit and which tree produces evil fruit. The Tree of Life produces eternal life and the other produces death. One is based upon **world peace** and the other **world violence** or death which culminates at Armageddon by a world war.

What needs to be understood is these two trees include the entire history of the world. From *Genesis* to *Revelation* it is prophesied and with *The Books of Acts* to *Revelation*, it becomes evident these two **mystery systems** are at play. Specifically, it affects God’s

two witnesses, Israel and The Gentiles who have been grafted into the olive tree which is no longer wild (Romans 11).

God's Two Witnesses

In Revelation 7 and 14, God defines His two witnesses as 144,000 of Israel and The Innumerable Gentile Multitude.

Romans 11 reveals at one time the only witness was Israel – known as **the natural olive tree**. This included The Ten Lost Tribes as “Israel” and The Jews as “Judah.” Zechariah 4 reveals they were God's **two witnesses**. Then, because of sin, The Ten Tribes were taken captive and mixed into all The Gentile Nations.

Only Judah was left as God's witness to the world. Then, Judah becomes corrupt, which includes The Priesthood in **the temple** and they go into captivity in 70-74 A.D. This includes the destruction of the temple.

So, God turns to another nation, The Ten Lost Tribes, who always thought they were Gentiles. Now, part of Israel and The Gentiles become God's two **witnesses** to the world.

Paul in Romans 11 reveals The Gentiles, represented as a wild olive tree being grafted into the **natural** olive tree, Israel. These are God's **two witnesses** to the world. Read *Revelation Uncovered* for details.

The olive tree represents **The Tree of Life** and produces the right fruit through God's Holy Spirit coming from the olive tree or Christ. Jesus, The Christ is The Tree of Life whereby Christians receive **salvation**. This is **the mystery** God spoke of in Colossians 1:27.

The Tree of Good and Evil is The Mystery System which exists at Armageddon where **world suicide** is about to take place. World annihilation would be the outcome if it were not for Christ's intervention for the "**elects sake**" or "**the two witnesses.**"

A Nation More Worthy

The word "curse" is defined as "destroying something Holy." Judah had corrupted themselves by rejecting The Messiah and God's Holy Spirit. Christ, therefore, decrees that God has left their **house** – Judah and **the temple**.

The Jews have eaten from The Tree of Good and Evil and by doing so have followed **the way of the flesh**. Jude 23 reveals it is your flesh which makes spots on your garment. Being human and following their human desires of survival, Judah had already corrupted themselves. In 70 – 74 A.D. the curse, through the tribulation, destroys them as a nation, along with **the temple**. Christians fled to the mountains and other places of safety.

Masada is the final destruction where The Jews committed suicide rather than be taken by The Romans. This occurred in 74 A.D. Then the tribulation was complete and The Jews no longer were a nation being scattered. The **great tribulation** is over and now God chooses His witnesses from a more noble nation, The Ten Lost Tribes (including The Gentiles).

Satan's Deception

Satan has caused the destruction of God's two witnesses, Israel (Ten Tribes) and Judah and now God chooses **new witnesses** based upon those who have been seeking righteousness by fearing and honoring God (Acts 10:34-35).

God seeks those who (through **faith**) want this **righteousness** and not their own. Just as Israel was tested in the wilderness, Christians will be tried **in the wilderness** of the world with Satan as their **god**.

Satan, by deceiving Eve, **in the garden**, will become the devil to all of Adam and Eve's children. Satan, from this point, nips constantly at the heels of Adam and Eve's progeny to poison them by fooling them into eating of The Tree of Good and Evil.

With a **new witness**, The Church of God, Satan immediately begins his deception just as he fought Christ for 40 days in the wilderness. Satan had his battle with Jesus, The Christ, **the very Son of God**. Now **judgment** begins with The Household of God (I Peter 4:17).

At the end of the trial period, which will last thousands of years according to II Peter 3, the question is, who are God's real **faithful witnesses** and who aren't. Some need to be tried and tested in a second great tribulation just like The Jews had been in 70 A.D.

Last Days And End Days

Hebrews 1:1-3 states that Jesus came in "**the last days**" and "**the last days**" started with The Roman Empire. It was **the fourth beast** of Daniel 2, when Jesus came in the **flesh**, the first time. If The Jews would have accepted Christ as The Messiah then, **the millennium** could have started and the world could have avoided the **curse** or The Great Tribulation.

Jesus was asked three questions in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. One was, "**When shall these things be?**" (temple destruction); the second was, "**What will be the sign of His com-**

ing?” and third, “**When will be the end of this world or age?**” (Matthew 24:3). “What will be The Mark of The Beast?” merely asks, “When the sign of **the temple’s** destruction would happen?” (Mark 13:4).

In Luke 21:7 they ask “when will these things be” – the destruction of **the temple** and when will it come to pass? That is why Jesus said, “**this generation shall not pass away till all be fulfilled.**” What should be fulfilled? The end of **the temple** is when the whole process takes place within that generation. However, Jesus was asked in *The Book of Matthew* when He would come and would that be the end of the world?

These are **the last days** since Christ was human, in the flesh, until this present day. The other question that needs to be answered is “when will the end of the world come with **His return.**”

Now Christ refers to His second coming and the end of the world. The point is not about **the last days**, but **the end of the world**. This is the end of days or **this world’s end**? Where can you find the answer?

Daniel 12 clearly prophesies **the end of days**. Notice what **the angel** tells Daniel: “**And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of the people [latter-day Israel]: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation *even* to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book**” (Daniel 12:1).

This is **the second tribulation** or destruction upon God’s people, but this time those written *in the book* are saved. This tribulation does not destroy everyone. The first tribulation with **the temple**

destroyed all of Jerusalem and **only** those who fled to the mountains ahead of time **were saved**.

Zachariah 14 reveals only one-half of Jerusalem is taken captive and then Christ intervenes. This is a **second great tribulation** or part of the **curse**. Also, this time all nations of the world, not merely The Roman Empire, are there. This is a world war. Malachi 3:16-17 reveals a *Book of Remembrance* which saves everyone written in it who will make up God's "**jewels**." Daniel 12:2-3 states this is a **time of resurrection**. This is definitely another great tribulation. Daniel, then, is told to seal up these words until "**the time of the end**." This is the end of the world. In Daniel 12:7 he is told that within a certain time, (times and an half) this end-of-days tribulation will take place. Then, all will be finished.

This answers the questions in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. The end of the world comes after 3½ years of tribulation and, then, Jesus **returns**.

Why are there two great tribulations or curses upon God's people? One happened in 70-74 A.D. with The Jews, but the second is prophecy, **yet to come**, which includes the whole world. Originally, Christ was to only come **once**. Christ was rejected and God went to another generation. This necessitated a **second coming**.

In Revelation 18 and 19, The Babylonian Mystery is revealed and Babylon is destroyed, but not God's people. This great tribulation terminates Babylon, **the great whore**.

This covers much of the future where the world follows the dictates of The Tree of Good and Evil in wanting to be their own "**god**" and not following The True God with The Tree of Life and

God's Holy Spirit.

The rest of *The New Testament* from *Romans* to *Revelation* reveals this future time of God's "**curse**" in Malachi 4, which includes the whole world.

CHAPTER 30

PROPHECY FAILS!

If The Jews would have believed John, The Baptist, (who was Elijah to come), they would have accepted Jesus as The Messiah and “the curse upon Judah and the world” would not have happened. Instead, almost two thousand years ago, Jesus would have been crucified in Rome and at His resurrection the saints and angels would have destroyed the fourth beast in Daniel 2, and The Millennium would have become a reality. Then, there would not have been a need for Christ to come a second time.

Can Prophecy Fail?

The Apostle Paul relates the **only lasting gift** of God is “**love.**” The word “love” in Greek is “**agàpè.**” Then The Apostle makes an astounding statement, “**Charity never faileth: but whether *there be prophecies, they shall fail***” (I Corinthians 13:8). All other gifts **will** also vanish. Then Paul states, “For we [Christians including the preaching ministry] **know in part**” (I Corinthians 13:9). No one has all the truth. Some Christians may understand one part of “**faith**” while others may understand another part of “**faith**” (Romans 14).

But what does Paul mean when he says “prophecy will fail?” The Greek word for “fail” is “katargeo.” Its definition carries several values of meanings. Some are “to make useless,” “cease,” “abol-

ish,” “destroy” or “to render idle.” It conveys the meaning of “to stop” or “pause.” Paul is stating prophecies can and will be stopped but only for a specific reason.

It is very close *in definition* to what is known in English grammar as “an aorist subjunctive mood.” It states “the subject cannot occur” or “be happening until all conditions are met.” If any of these conditions do not occur, then **the process** stops (in this case the prophecy stopped). The Greek word “all” cannot be translated into a simple definition in English. The best we can do with the translation is “when all conditions are met,” Paul said prophecy, then, can continue. An example can try to explain when you might say, “I would have come, had you been here. Then, if you were here when I came, both of us could have met.” In this case, **if not all conditions are met** (the situation stops) and cannot continue.

Many times the English translation for the word “all” has used the same grammatical meaning. Jesus refers to The Law and Prophets that no change will occur in The Law until “all” is fulfilled (Matthew 5:18). The English translation of “all” is grammatically “**in the subjunctive mood.**” For The Law “**to change**” or “**be fulfilled**” “all” of The Law must take place. Another example is I Corinthians 15:22. The word “all” is in “the aorist subjunctive mood.” Until every **required condition occurs**, Christ cannot **save** “all” of Adam and Eve’s children.

For prophecies to fail or become **idle**, God’s “will” or “goals” must have been followed through. If not, the prophecy cannot and will not be fulfilled.

Examples

A few **biblical** examples of failed prophecy are as follows: (1)

When God had determined to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah, He decided to let Abraham know about it (Lot was Abraham's relative). Abraham pleads and tries to get The Lord to put a stop to this prophecy. When God considers Abraham's request and decides if Abraham can find ten righteous men, He will concede and not allow the prophecy to be fulfilled. (2) An extraordinary example is when Israel sinned by building the golden calf and God was going to kill everyone with the exception of The Levites. Moses fearfully asked Him not to kill them because he felt God's name would be tarnished. God did, indeed, change His mind and allowed them to live, but only by establishing *The Old Covenant*, The Law of Moses by adding it to *The Torah*. (3) Another case is when Israel was supposed to enter God's promised land or God's rest. Because they lacked "**faith**" God would not allow them to enter His "**rest**." God felt because they lacked **faith** in Him and had a **wrong heart**, they could not enter His "rest" (Hebrews 3:10-11). They had to take "a test" for a period of 40 long years. In the end, only Joshua and Caleb were found **faithful** and passed the test.

Because The Israelites "**tried**" God ten times, the entire generation had to die as God planned on doing in the very beginning. Read Acts 7. Of that generation only Joshua and Caleb entered "**the rest**" but it took forty years to weed out all **the unfaithful** ones or allow them to die out. Once again prophecy failed or did not come to fruition until Israel, in their hearts, were ready to enter God's "**rest**." Over and over again, God has caused prophecy "**to fail**" or "**cease**" until all the required conditions were met or came to pass.

Christ's First Coming

One of the most meaningful and greatest failings of prophecy was

concerning the first coming of Jesus, The Messiah. In *The Old Testament*, no second coming of Christ was necessary or deemed to be needed. Yeshua's **first coming** was to bring "**world peace**" and "**forgiveness of sin.**" At that time The Millennium could have begun. Why did Jesus have to come to the earth in the flesh? When Christ was born, what did **the angels** declare? "**Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men**" (Luke 2:13-14). The angels declared Jesus was born to bring **world peace**.

It was only as an adult did Jesus proclaim, "**But whosoever shall deny me *before* men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. Think not that I come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword**" [war] (Matthew 10:34). There is your answer. When Jesus came, first, in the flesh, He came to bring peace on earth. But they denied Jesus, as The Christ. When He comes again, He will be bringing **the sword** (war). How clear! Jesus first came to bring world peace but they denied Him and the prophecy failed or did not need to be completed, because certain conditions were not met. What was this prophecy that failed in *The Old Testament*? Putting the two scriptures together in Luke 2:14 and Matthew 10:34, you are going to see that with Christ's first coming, He was to bring world peace. When that didn't work out, it became necessary for Him to come, yet, again. But with it – came a curse. Prophecy had to cease or **was stopped** because of this curse. World peace is delayed for thousands of years before Christ comes a second time and brings world peace when The Millennium can begin.

Hezekiah's Death

King Hezekiah of Judah was told he would die. The Prophet Isaiah told this prophecy to the king. Hezekiah pleaded with God to

let him live longer because he had been obeying God. Since Hezekiah was a righteous king, God heard his prayer. God changed His mind and gave Hezekiah an additional 15 years. Here God again changed His mind and gave Hezekiah a sign **as proof** he would live longer. God changed prophecy by moving the sun back ten degrees. By moving time, God was giving Hezekiah 15 years longer to live. Wow! Prophecy was actually changed by God. Isaiah then told Hezekiah to place a fig upon his boil so he got better and lived for 15 more years. Also read Ezekiel 38, Isaiah 38 and 39.

As time goes on, God defeats The Assyrian army of 185,000 but Hezekiah makes a major mistake. When The King of Babylon hears of Hezekiah's healing, he sends emissaries to congratulate him. Hezekiah got carried away with himself and showed all his treasure and riches in **the temple**. God tells Isaiah to let Hezekiah know he should not have boasted and showed all his wealth. God prophesies Babylon would take Judah captive and take all **the temple's** riches. However, this prophecy did not occur until Hezekiah's death, so Hezekiah is pleased there will be peace, at least while he yet lives. God's future prophecy is: "**Let them bring forth, and shew us what shall happen: let them shew the former things, what they be, that we may consider them, and know the latter end of them: or declare us things for to come**" (Isaiah 41:22). This prophecy is in hindsight, but applies to the future also.

A Failed Prophecy

Isaiah had a prophecy about The Messiah and His first coming as The Savior (Isaiah 40-45). No second coming had been prophesied. Only "**one coming**" of The Messiah was mentioned. What is the problem? The difficulty and answer is, " that particular

prophecy **failed.**” King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon came and took Judah captive by fulfilling the Hezekiah prophecy given by Isaiah and all **the temple** riches were taken to Babylon.

As revealed by Daniel, this captivity of Judah was to last 70 years before **the temple** could be restored waiting for The Messiah. Notice what Jesus had to say about God's **kingdom and world rule**: “**And from the days of John, The Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John**” (Matthew 11:12-13). This is exactly what occurred.

By rejecting Judah, Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, took by violence God's **heavenly kingdom**. The Time of The Gentiles **begins**. From this point on, God allows Gentiles to rule the world on God's behalf (Daniel 2). Jesus will come when The Times of The Gentiles is **fulfilled or completed** and takes back **The Kingdom of God**. Jesus will, at that time, restore God's government (Daniel 2:44).

Nebuchadnezzar lost sight that it is God, in heaven, who decides who is going to rule His **kingdom** even though He allows Satan to do his damage. God even sets up the basest (most evil) of men according to His discretion to rule governments. This is the reason Nebuchadnezzar had to be a wild man in the wilderness for seven years. He had to learn it is God, in heaven, who runs the **kingdom** according to His plans and not “**mere men**” (Daniel 4). This statement by Christ has been so since the time of The Garden of Eden. However, something different is prophesied from the time of John, The Baptist.

Jesus declared, “**And if ye will receive it, this is Elijah [Elias], which was for to come**” (Matthew 11:14). John, The Baptist is

Elijah. This prophecy of Isaiah's is from "**the time of Elijah to come**" who is John, The Baptist. "**Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, [Judah] saith your God**" (Isaiah 40:1). God is about to declare a time of peace with no more war. This speaks of The Millennium in prophecy: "**Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of The Lord's hand double for all her sins**" (Isaiah 40:2).

There will be no more violence or warfare in God's **kingdom**. This doesn't mean forgiveness of sin (which is not included) but is only **a pardon**. Only Christ, by His sacrifice, is able to forgive sin. Jesus first came to forgive sin by His sacrifice, but as **the angel** said, it is also to bring peace to the world (Luke 2:14). The first coming of Jesus was to bring world peace and forgiveness of sin. The Millennium was to start with The Messiah's first coming. It wasn't actually **intended** or there wasn't any need for Jesus to come a second time according to the prophecy (Luke 19:39-47).

Notice: "**O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often I would have gathered thy children [Judah] together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not.**" [Now the question is when was Judah's and Jerusalem's "end of warfare" to occur]? "**The voice of one [him] that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of The Lord, make his paths straight**" (Mark 1:3). Wow! This is right out of Mark 1:2-3. John, as Elijah prepared "**the way**" of The Lord, Christ, The Messiah. Read the entire prophecy from Isaiah 40 to Isaiah 45.

The end of war for God's people was to come when John, The Baptist was preparing The Coming of The Messiah, Jesus, The Christ. You can read all of Malachi concerning this prophecy.

Not only had Judah corrupted God's way but **also corrupted the temple** as well. That is why Jesus cast out the money changers in **the temple** and said, **"You shall not make my fathers house a place of merchandise."**

Back to Malachi. **"Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me [Messiah]: and The Lord, whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant [Abrahamic], whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of Hosts [armies]"** (Malachi 3:1-4).

There it is. This is the prophecy of **"Christ's first coming."** There are **two messengers**. One is Elijah, who is to prepare the way for the second messenger, The Messiah. Jesus comes to God's **temple** and finds it is as corrupt as The Leaders of Judah.

What caused this prophecy to fail? Why did it become necessary for a **second coming** of The Messiah? Notice what Jesus would have done if the prophecy had been completed: **"But who may abide the day of his [first] coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiners' fire, and like fuller's sope: And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness"** (Malachi 3:2-3). This refers to The Messiah's first coming. That is why Malachi 4:1-3 reveals The Day of The Lord. **"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch** (Malachi 4:1-3). Always remember, this prophecy was to take place during **the first coming of Jesus**.

If Judah would have accepted Jesus as The Messiah, then Christ would, at that time, have been killed by The Romans, **resurrected** and **established The Millennium's rule**. Peace would have come for Jerusalem and brought forgiveness of sin. What happened to cause the failure of this prophecy? The Bible is very clear. **“Remember ye the Law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, *with the statutes and judgments*. Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet [John, The Baptist] before the coming of the great and dreadful Day of The Lord. And he shall turn the heart of the fathers [Abraham, etc] to the children, and the heart of the children [Judah] to their fathers [Abraham, etc] LEST I COME AND SMITE THE EARTH WITH A CURSE”** (Malachi 4:4-6).

There is **the biblical** answer. Christ came to Jerusalem riding a colt and the people **declared** Jesus was The Messiah, their King (Zechariah 9:9-10). What actually happened when He came? The Nation of Judah rejected The Messiah who they had been waiting for, and instead, had The Romans put Him to death. Matthew 23 relates the state of the religious leaders of that day and the state of **the temple**. Why did **the prophecy** fail, which, then, required Jesus to come **a second time**? First, they rejected John, who was Elijah, **“to come”** and they had Jesus killed because they didn't **return** to The Law of Moses as Jesus preached. So, the curse was to fall upon the world.

Why didn't The Messiah's coming, the first time, bring world peace with The Millennium, as prophesied? By rejecting Jesus, The Christ and Elijah, the whole world was cursed. Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21 declared this curse.

II Peter 1:19 states, The Apostles now have a more **“sure”** or **“certain word of prophecy.”** They knew the world was under a curse.

Peter also knew the curse could last for thousands of years (II Peter 3:7-9).

The prophecy in Isaiah failed because God's people rejected the prophecy and caused a world curse to fall upon mankind. A new people had to be called who accepted Jesus as The Messiah (Matthew 21:43).

Prophecies do fail because certain conditions aren't met, but finally a sure word of prophecy makes "**the final cut**" to be in God's **plan** as prophecy predicted.

CHAPTER 31

WHAT IS THE CURSE?

The word “curse” in *The Bible* carries various meanings. The Hebrew or Greek generally use the appropriate Hebrew or Greek word denoting the context and meaning intended. To understand God’s “curse” you need to explicitly define what God is revealing.

Malachi 4:6

In this verse the word “curse” refers to “a curse upon the entire world.” **“And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.”** This applies to the entire earth. Also, this English word for “curse” is used sparingly in *The Bible*. The word is “cherem.” Its meaning is “something holy which needs to be destroyed.”

This curse, therefore, applies to The Day of The Lord when God steps in to save the world from suicide. Those who have God’s **righteousness** are saved while the rest are destroyed. Malachi’s answer: **“For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall”** (Malachi 4:1-2).

This prophecy is conditional. If the children had turned to **the fathers**, there would not have been a world-wide curse.

If Judah accepted Christ, **the millennium** would have started and there would not have been a world curse. Since they rejected The Messiah the world curse is sure to happen. It is now a prophecy, yet to be fulfilled.

Notice this is not The White Throne Judgment as some think, but Christ **returns** with “**healing in His wings.**” The millennium begins and this curse is The Battle of Armageddon when nations come together to fight in The City of Jerusalem (Zechariah 4:1-4). Then Verse 4 explains Jesus’ **return** to establish peace (Malachi 4:2). Those with The Mark of The Beast in the world are destroyed. Only the righteous are saved. This is the time of The Wrath of God.

This is the “world curse” or “cherem.” If the hearts of the children as preached by John, The Baptist and Christ would have obeyed, there would never have been a curse. Now, that which was to be Holy, Judah, and finally, the whole world, has corrupted themselves, so they have been cursed and will be destroyed.

Malachi 3:9

Another **curse** is declared only against The Nation of Judah. This curse is enjoined because The Jews were not paying tithes to The Levites, The Priests in **the temple**.

In this case the Hebrew word for “curse” is “meerah.” This Hebrew word denotes “excrement.” This is not “cherem” meaning “to destroy” – but “excrement.” The other word in Malachi 4 “to destroy” is referring to two different prophecies.

The word “curse” in Malachi 3:9 is “to get rid of corruption or waste and you will be blessed.” In Malachi 4:6 “the curse” means “it is too late.” Corruption has come to also complete violence and what was to be Holy must be destroyed. This is what happened with the flood in Noah’s day. Since every thought of humanity was to do evil, it was time to destroy the world except for Noah and his family. This time “**the righteous**” are spared, but not those with The Mark of The Beast. Complete destruction or God’s **wrath** explodes. This is the winepress in Revelation 14:20.

Two Tribulations

Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21 actually reveal **two tribulations**. Some believe there is only one but you will see there are two tribulations in those scriptures.

Many do not realize in the above three accounts of Christ’s second coming, Jesus answers, in private, **three different questions**. Matthew 24 is the only account referring to three different questions asked by His Disciples. “**And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world [Age]?**”

This scripture is the only one that answers these three questions for The Disciples:

- 1 **Destruction of Herod’s Temple.**
- 2 **Signs for the second coming of Christ.**
- 3 **End of the world or age.**

Mark 13 and Luke 21 only asks one question. When will **the temple** of Herod be destroyed? Jesus only answers this one question in *Mark* and *Luke*. The other events are mentioned, but only **“the destruction of the temple”** of Herod needs to be answered. That is why in Luke 21:32 it states, **“This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.”**

A generation is forty years or the exact time from Jesus' commission to fulfill His **ministry** in 30 A.D. until 70 A.D. when Herod's Temple was destroyed. Christ was answering the question as to when will **the temple** be destroyed. It was destroyed in that generation after 40 years of trial for Judah to stop the curse in *Malachi*, but they did not change. The curse began (but with two tribulations). The first, Luke 21:20 declares, **“When ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies [not nations], then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.”** What desolation? Matthew 23:28 reveals **the desolation of the temple**. To understand Matthew 24 you must read and understand Matthew 23.

Luke's account of **the desolation of the temple** is the exact question asked in Luke 21:7. Also, it isn't the nations of the world gathered around Jerusalem at the end time but **only armies**. There is even more. Luke 12:21-23 prophesies when this tribulation or desolation takes place, they are not to enter Jerusalem, but flee to the mountains and woe to those with child or leaving on The Sabbath. What desolation is this and which tribulation? Luke 21:24 clearly reveals two tribulations. **“And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations. Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.”**

This is **not** The Great Tribulation of Christ's second coming. Clearly this tribulation only refers to the time when Herod's Tem-

ple is destroyed. This tribulation only refers to Judah going into the captivity and being scattered into all nations. That is history.

The Great Tribulation at the end of days is discussed in Daniel 12 which lasts 3½ years. This is **the end of days** and the time of world rule by Gentile nations **is over** and **Christ returns**. Plainly, Luke 21:24 said this occurs when The Time of The Gentiles **is completed**. That is why after **the fulfillment** of The Gentile's rule in Luke 21:25 refers to heavenly signs as stated in Revelation 6 and in Revelation 7. Christ returns to bring world peace and to begin **the millennium**. This is the second tribulation or The Great Tribulation to conclude the curse of the world in Malachi 4:6.

That means in Matthew 24:15-26 the first tribulation of **the temple** is destroyed by Titus and the abomination placed in The Holy Place by Titus, which is Jupiter Olympus. This is all past history and no longer prophecy. Remember *Luke's* and *Mark's* account answers the question of the destruction of Herod's Temple only. Matthew 24:29 states, "**Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.**"

This is not the first tribulation of Herod's Temple being destroyed, but when Christ **returns** the second time. Why? Because Luke 21:27 reveals the time of Christ's second coming. It is as lightning coming out of the east. Then the eagles, Christ's **saints**, meet Him in the clouds. There is **no secret** about His coming. Matthew 24:26 warns you should not believe when someone states Jesus is coming **in secret**.

Matthew 24 answers all three questions asked, but in *Mark* and *Luke*, one question is asked as to when **the temple** will be

destroyed.

Prophecy Fulfilled

These three prophetic accounts give the complete requirement of God as revealed in Daniel 9 and Christ's life. Daniel 9:27 prophecy requires 70×7 days or years to take place before **the temple's** destruction.

Seventy times 7 is 490 years. From the decree to rebuild **the temple** by Cyrus, The Great and finally fulfilled with the building of the wall in Artaxerxes' day until Masada lasts 490 years. The Jewish nation no longer exists and the temple is destroyed. The last stronghold at Masada ended in 74 A.D.

Jesus was born about 3 B.C. and weaned two years later. That is why Herod killed all children from two years and younger. That leaves 70 years for Judah to repent. This ended in 70 A.D. with the destruction of **the temple**.

John, The Baptist and Jesus at His baptism in 30 A.D. allowed one generation, or 40 years for Israel, to become God's people and follow God's Laws of Moses. This brings you to 70 A.D. with the destruction of **the temple** and the first tribulation of the scattering of The Jews into all nations as captives. The second tribulation affects the whole world because they became totally corrupt and violent.

God's **wrath** is vented with the seven last plagues and Christ **returns**, immediately after this **world tribulation**, with heavenly signs before the **seventh trump**.

The curse of Malachi 4:4 is a destruction of the world's system of

The Mark of The Beast, which brings **the second great tribulation** thousands of years after the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Notice Peter's words: "**The Lord is not slack concerning his promise** [salvation], **as some men count slackness; but is long suffering** [patient] **to us-ward** [Christians], **not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**" (II Peter 3:9).

Since God "**wills**" not to lose anyone, how long does it state God allows this world to continue? "**But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day**" (II Peter 3:8).

Coming World Curse

The rest of *The Bible* "story" from *Romans* to *Revelation* relates how The Church of God stays **faithful** to Christ. Jesus said since The Jews rejected their Messiah He would go to a nation more noble or able to bring forth "**the fruits**" (Matthew 21:43).

In *The Book of Acts* Christ gave The Apostles their worldwide commission to witness He was The Messiah. This was The Church of God's purpose to fulfill this mission (Acts 1:8).

Acts begins with Pentecost and ends with The Apostle Paul's first imprisonment in Rome. Rome is where the world government of The Roman Empire is headquartered. For the two years he is in '**house arrest**' – he preaches *the gospel* to those in the palace (Acts 28:30-31).

The Apostle Peter, in Acts 2, preaches Christ on Pentecost in Jerusalem. *The Book of Acts* covers Jerusalem, Judah, Samaria to Rome the very headquarters in Rome. Act 1:8 is being fulfilled to

the world of The Apostle's day.

Now, you have read this preaching of **the gospel** to the world, according to Peter, in II Peter 3, is to last for thousands of years so God's patience, to bring everyone to **salvation**, can and will happen.

There it is, **the curse** of Malachi 4:4 is thousands of years away and the first tribulation of the temple ended in 70 A.D.

Romans to Revelation reveals why The Great Tribulation is thousands of years away from Christ's first coming since the first tribulation of **the temple** destruction and captivity of Judah is history. It is all dependent upon the *true gospel* of Christ being preached to the world by **the church** as a faithful witness. If not, the world is cursed.

CHAPTER 32

ROMANS – CORINTHIANS – GALATIANS

The world's future curse, The Day of The Lord, is predicated upon how well the world responds to the churches witnessing *The Gospel of Christ*. The rest of *The Bible Story – Romans to Revelation* reveals how the church preaches *The Gospel of Christ* to the world.

Romans

The Book of Romans addresses **the churches' "first problem."** From Pentecost onward, The Jews persecute this "**new Jewish sect**" called **Christians**. Since Christianity was regarded as a Jewish sect the circumcision party in "**the church**" tried to get Christians circumcised. Why?

First and foremost, those not circumcised could not go into God's **temple** which was still there. They couldn't even enjoy feasting together as brothers should (Read *Galatians*).

Most of all, being circumcised made them a debtor to keep the entire Law of Moses (Galatians 5:3). Now, you can understand why circumcision was such an important act to those from "**the circumcision party.**"

Those who believed Gentiles had to be circumcised in order to be saved and therefore had to keep The Law of Moses didn't understand *The Torah*. You must understand the meaning of *The Torah*

and The Law of Moses in regard to **salvation**.

What Is The Torah?

The age-old debate among Christians is “do they keep The Law?” There is absolutely no place in *The Bible* where it says Christians should **not** keep The Law. In Galatians, Paul reveals Christians are not subject to “**the works**” of The Law. That is, they do not keep “**all the legalistic deeds**” of The Law. But that makes it sound like it is ALL RIGHT for Christians to SIN. Does *The Bible* give a definitive answer to the question? And why is *The Torah* called The Law?

The Wrong Argument

Abraham kept **the commandments, statutes and Laws of God** (Genesis 26:5). So The LAW was known long BEFORE Moses was born. Paul also makes an astounding statement in Galatians 3:17. “**And this I say, the Covenant [Abrahamic], that was confirmed before of God in Christ, THE LAW, which was four hundred thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.**” This sounds like a contradiction. If The Law came four hundred and thirty years after The Abrahamic Covenant, then how did Abraham know to keep The Law? The Law doesn't seem to make sense. Then, to make matters worse read this scripture: “**Wherefore then [serve] The Law? It was ADDED because of transgressions [SINS]. TILL THE SEED SHOULD COME to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator**” (Galatians 3:19). What is the answer? Check *The Bible* further.

The word “serve” in this verse is not found in any of the early manuscripts. It **was added** in later translations. The real question

being asked in the original is, “Wherefore then The LAW?” That is the real **biblical** question or why have The Law at all? How can you “ADD something” to “something that already exists?”

Plainly, Paul states The Law “**was added**” to something. It certainly **could not** have **been added** to itself. The Law can’t be added to “**a law**” already existing. This Law given to Moses had to “be added” to something which ALREADY EXISTED, but what “was added” had to be different. Read Verse 19 again. First, whatever **was added, was added** because of sin, (when Israel built the golden calf). But this addition was only to last **until Christ came**. Thirdly, Christ was **the promised seed** in The Abrahamic **covenant to restore paradise**. Then Paul answers the question about the **added part**. “**Wherefore the Law was our SCHOOLMASTER to BRING US UNTO CHRIST, that we might be JUSTIFIED by FAITH**” (Galatians 3:24). So, something was ADDED to The Law which was different from what was known about The Law four hundred thirty years **earlier** in Abraham’s day.

What Was Added?

You already read the answer. The part which was ADDED to The Law, which did not previously exist in The Law, was that PART which was a SCHOOLMASTER which would be able to LEAD YOU TO CHRIST. EVERYTHING THAT WAS “SHADOWED” OR LED YOU TO JESUS, THE CHRIST WAS ADDED. IT was a SCHOOLMASTER. Paul calls these additions, “WORKS” (“ER-GON”) or “DEEDS” OF THE LAW. So many have attempted to explain, but this time let Christ give you the complete explanation and answer. In Hebrew the word for “works” is rendered “commands.” If you read or write down whenever Paul used the word “**works**” and inserted “commands” you, then, would read “why

keep **The Commands of The Law.**” What kind of “commands” or “deeds?” Those “**commands**” in The Law which pointed to the schoolmaster – Christ. When Jesus came, all those “legal works” or “**commands**” ceased. Why?

Jesus Gives The Answer

Jesus said, “**Think not that I come to DESTROY THE LAW, OR THE PROPHETS: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill**” (Matthew 5:17). In Greek, the word “FULFILL” means “to entirely make full.” In English this one word “fulfill” would be defined as “COMPLETE.” Christ plainly said He did not come to destroy The Law OR THE PROPHETS, but “**to complete**” them. But how?

Many read these verses but miss the CONTEXT. Jesus did not refer only to The Law but also to The Prophets. So there is something in The Law and The PROPHETS that Jesus was going “to complete” or “bring to its totality.” What was that? If you will allow *the scripture* to interpret itself instead of reading with a pre-set agenda, the biblical answer is **clear**. Jesus discloses *The NEW COVENANT* in The Law or *Torah*, as well as, The Prophets. Then Jesus states He came to **complete** The Law and The PROPHETS. “**For verily I say unto you, TILL HEAVEN and EARTH PASS, one jot or one tittle shall in NO WISE PASS FROM THE LAW, TILL ALL BE FULFILLED**” [completed].

At the time of The New Heaven and Earth a certain part of The LAW does “cease.” But how? It ceases when it is “FULFILLED.” In what way does The Law cease? Remember there is something different about The Torah or LAW which is a PROCESS. Something in The Law and Prophets discloses something which happens. Jesus in His parting “**words**” to His Disciples said. “**These**

are the words which I spoke unto you, while I was yet with you, THAT ALL THINGS MUST BE FULFILLED, which were WRITTEN in the Law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and in the Psalms CONCERNING ME” (Luke 24:44).

There is your **biblical answer**. Jesus tells you everything in The Law, PROPHETS and PSALMS concerning HIM must be COMPLETED. Everywhere you read the word “FULFILL” in *The New Testament*, as in Luke 24:44, “**the word**” or “FULFILL” is “**to complete.**” In Greek it is “PLERO” or “PLEROMA.”

This is exactly what Paul said The Law was supposed to do in Galatians 3:24. “**Wherefore The Law was OUR SCHOOLMASTER to bring us unto Christ, that we might be JUSTIFIED BY FAITH.**” Christ and Paul declared The Law and The Prophets were written to prove Jesus was The Christ. Jesus was God’s very Son as The Law and Prophets revealed.

When those parts of The Law or PROPHETS were **completed**, you no longer could regard it as **PROPHECY**, but it then became **HISTORY**. The Prophets and this part of The Law were “completed” or “fulfilled” and NO LONGER APPLIED. The jot and tittle of The Law or Prophets were “fulfilled” or “complete.” When Jesus was sacrificed as The Paschal Lamb, Christians no longer needed to sacrifice a lamb (sheep) or any other animal. Jesus already “fulfilled” or “completed” that part of The Law.

Read Paul’s answer following The Law’s **purpose**. “**But after that FAITH IS COME [HAPPENS], WE ARE NO LONGER UNDER A SCHOOLMASTER**” (Galatians 3:25).

There is your **biblical** definition for “**under The Law.**” It is **everything** that **pointed to Christ** which He **completed**. Every

JOT and TITTLE of The Law and PROPHETS must be “completed” or “fulfilled” when it occurs as **prophecy** and then, when it is “finished” or “completed” or “fulfilled” it becomes known as **history**. So declares **God's “word.”**

Paul, completing Galatians 3, then reveals once you are baptized you are one of God's children. Now, **HAVING PUT ON CHRIST** and no longer are for Jews or Greeks, male or female, because “**in Christ**” you are not under any Old Covenant but are now **HEIRS** according to the **PROMISE** made to Abraham. You have received **your inheritance** (Ephesians 1:13-14). The Abrahamic **promise of The Law or Torah** must be “completed” or “fulfilled” and Jesus in Matthew 5, 6 and 7 gives the entire answer. Read those chapters how Jesus changes The Letter of The Law to The Spirit of The Law (II Corinthians 3). The letter or written Law produces **DEATH** but The **SPIRIT** of The Law produces **LIFE** which is **SALVATION**. How **clear**, how **biblically simple**. The Law is now transferred from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*, which is a **spiritual matter**. The Law is **spiritual** and **always exists** (Romans 7:14). The part which “**was added**” because of sin was instituted to reveal Christ. **When Jesus completes The Prophecy, it is over and is history.** *The Old Covenant* never makes anyone perfect and never could save anyone. That is why Paul says “**the letter**” gives death. Doing The Letter gives a good physical life, but The Works of The Law can never **FORGIVE SIN** (Hebrews 10). Read the full chapter. Only *The New Covenant* gives **SALVATION** through Christ. Christ completes The Letter of The Law about Him and puts ***The Torah Law on a higher standard.***

Law Of Moses Added

What “was added” is The Law of Moses and all its “physical

works” or legal “deeds.” The Law of Moses cannot be the same Law that Abraham kept in Genesis 26:5. Why not? They could not be the same since Paul said The Law of Moses was added four hundred thirty years after Abraham. What “**was added**” to The Commandments and Statutes had to be different. What was different with The Law of Moses?

Deuteronomy 5:2-3 states, “**The Lord our God made a COVENANT with us [Israel] in Horeb. The Lord MADE NOT THIS COVENANT with OUR FATHERS, but with us, even us [Israel], who are ALL OF US [Israel] here alive this day.**”

There is your **biblical answer**. This Covenant was not made with Noah, Abraham, Isaac or Jacob and was different in some way than The Commandments and Statutes in Genesis 26:5. The Covenants in The Law or *The Torah* made with Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were DIFFERENT than The Law of Moses which was “**added**” to *The Torah*. All these Covenants are in The Law or The Torah. In Hebrew, “*The Torah*” is “the teaching” or “learning a **pathway**” or “**way**” to Christ. *The Torah* is far more than *The Old Covenant* “**added**” to *The Torah*. *The Torah* is a **way to salvation** or Christ. **Christ is “The Torah.”** *The Torah* is “**the schoolmaster**” to lead to Jesus. *The Old Covenant* was only “**a shadow**” of good things to come (Colossians 2:16-17 and Hebrews 10:1).

How was it different? First, it was only made with Israel and not The Gentiles. That is why **the church** in Acts 15 stated The Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law. Read all of Acts 15.

Secondly, it was *The Old Covenant* that was **added** to *The Torah*. This Old Covenant “**was added**” because of “**sin**” and that is why Paul said The Law was made for the UNRIGHTEOUS (I Timothy.

1:9-10). The Law of Moses was added to *The Torah* four hundred thirty years after Abraham. *The Torah* is a **pathway** or **the way** to **salvation**. Once **the shadows** of good things to come “**occurred**” they, then, became the past or history. That is EXACTLY what Christ said in Matthew 5, 6 and 7.

The Spiritual Torah

Jesus, The Christ, clearly stated, “**For I say unto you, that except YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL EXCEED *the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees*, ye shall in no case enter into The Kingdom of Heaven**” (Matthew 5:20). My, how plain!

The scribes and Pharisees command the keeping of *The Old Covenant* made only to Israel and proselytes who were circumcised and kept The Letter of The Law. Then Jesus defines in the rest of Matthew 5 what being “**more righteous**” really means. The Law of Moses with its **legalistic works** and **commands** could never give you **SALVATION**. Why? Keeping The Letter of The Law NEVER CHANGES HUMAN NATURE. It is too weak!

A Higher Standard Of The Torah

To be in **the kingdom of heaven** you must be **PERFECT** as Christ concluded in Matthew 5:48. The Law of Moses could never make anyone perfect, but as Christ clearly said, *The New Covenant* could.

Now, *The Torah*, that is predicated UPON FAITH as the faith Abraham had, makes a Christian RIGHTEOUS or PERFECT. All the **added** prophecies which pointed to Christ once they occurred, Christians are no longer commanded to keep them. They are **history**. Now, it is the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** of *The Torah*

Law WHICH IS **WRITTEN** IN THEIR HEARTS (DESIRES) and MINDS (**TRUTH**).

Christ is Your Passover Lamb. He has made everyone unleavened as long as you are “in Christ” and you have received The Holy Spirit (inheritance) and Jesus has **ATONED** you to God. All The Holy Days and what they **shadow** are history for Christians. They are not required for salvation.

Does that mean you no longer can memorialize The Holy Days? Of course not! That is why Paul told Gentile Christians (I Corinthians 5) how to keep **the feast** in **SINCERITY** (honesty) and **TRUTH**. The Feast of Unleavened Bread is for Christians to be **SINLESS** and not like the fornicator (I Corinthians 5). Christians to be **SAVED** are on a higher standard of **KEEPING THE Torah Law** by The Law “completed” or “fulfilled” in their **HEARTS AND MINDS!** For Christians **all the added deeds of The Law are completed in Christ**. Now, in *The New Covenant*, “*The Torah*” is a **spiritual matter** and must be kept on a higher level in **your heart and mind** and not by “deeds” or “works.”

Christian’s very nature must become like Christ – **sinless**. That is called **spiritual growth** (Ephesians 4). This is *The Old Covenant* and The Law of Moses. The written Law of Moses is in **the letter**, or written, to tell what **righteousness is to all unconverted, carnal people** (I Timothy 1:9). Paul in Romans said it is a **matter of faith** that God **saves** you and not by The Law of Moses. Therefore, circumcision was not and is not required.

Corinthians

The Church of God in Corinth was just the opposite. They were primarily Gentiles and idolaters. They were **babes** “in Christ”

and still carnal (I Corinthians 3:1-2). They were so carnal they were beginning to become divided into their own denominations by choosing their particular favorite minister. Paul had to warn them against this practice. In fact, Paul covered many basic Christian subjects in his letters to The Corinthians. They just couldn't or wouldn't follow Christ.

Galatians

In *The Book of Galatians* once again the subject flares up by “**the circumcision party**” over “**table-fellowship.**” Peter and others succumbed when some came from Jerusalem and wouldn't feast with The Gentiles. This was part of The Acts 15 Doctrinal Dispute over Gentiles being circumcised and keeping The Law (Acts 15:5).

Once James declared The Holy Spirit given to The Gentiles **without circumcision** or **keeping** The Law of Moses, it would then prove God now accepted The Gentiles in fellowship with Israel (Romans 11). Therefore, it was not necessary for Gentiles to be circumcised or keep The Law of Moses (Acts 15:24). Since The Gentiles received The Holy Spirit they were **heirs** along with **converted Jews** and no longer servants or slaves under *The New Covenant* to *The Old Covenant* (Galatians 4).

Servants And Heirs

At times, a certain **biblical** subject may be difficult to comprehend. This may be so, especially when you try to understand the differences between *The Old* and *New Testaments*. First, you must understand both are based upon *The Torah* or The Law, which is *The Old Covenant*. *The Old Covenant* is where you must keep everything in The Letter or by “**physical commands.**” On the

other hand, *The New Covenant* is a matter of keeping The Law by allowing God to write His **commandments** in your heart and mind. *The Old Covenant* makes you a “**servant**” while *The New Covenant* makes you an “heir.”

There is even a simpler and even easier way to know the difference between a **servant** and an **heir**. Both keep the same Law but in different ways. Let *The Bible* give you the answer.

Servants

Paul makes an astounding statement concerning The Law. “**Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be Lord [master] of all**” (Galatians 4:1).

Even a prince, in order to be “**an heir**” to a throne as king, is still a child and therefore like any other **servant**. In this verse the word for “servant” in the Greek is “doulos.” This is a different Greek word for “servant” than “diakonos” or “a waiter who serves others.” “Doulos” used for servant applies to “a slave.” They are owned and in bondage to someone or something.

Paul is telling you even if one is a **prince** but still a child in heart, the prince is regarded as a **slave**. That is why Paul states, “**But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father**” (Galatians 4:2). This royal child is treated like a slave and must do all he is told by others in authority. Until the father decides this child should receive his inheritance, he continues **in bondage as a slave**.

This can't be any clearer! You will see The Law of Moses was designed with all its legalistic deeds or works to keep Israel, as a

nation, sinless. They had to keep every part or works of The Law and therefore were in slavery or bondage to *The Old Covenant*.

Paul then declares, “**Even so we [Christians], when we were children, in bondage under the elements of the world**” (Galatians 4:3). Christians were slaves or servants to elements of the world. What are the elements which make Christians slaves?

The Greek for “element” is “stoicheion” which means “something orderly in arrangement.” It is **of this world**, as done by humans, which has a set physical system. If one is speaking of religion then it is a religious or “**a physical system of worship.**”

It is what you would follow **over and over** but in “**an orderly manner.**” It is your religion and you are **slaves** or **servants** to it. Does *The Bible* relate to what Paul is referring to? Yes, it does! It is so descriptive you cannot deny its meaning if you will be honest with yourself.

An Allegory

Paul, out of concern, reveals the answer. “**My little children [slaves], of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you**” (Galatians 4:19). “**Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, do ye not hear the Law**” (Galatians 4:21)?

Paul, in this case, defines “**under The Law**” not as a penalty but exactly what it literally says. The Law tells you, “**Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, do ye not hear the Law**” (Galatians 4:21)?

The Apostle said if you want to be under The Law, then listen to what The Law reveals. “**For it is written [The Law], that Abra-**

ham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid [servant slave], the other by a freewoman [heir]. But he *who* was of the Bondwoman [servant] was born after the flesh [carnal] but he of the freewoman [heir] was by promise [a gift]” (Galatians 4:22-24).

The subject is the difference between being “**a servant**” as the **bondwoman** or **the free woman** as “**an heir**” to a promise (as in a will). God defines the difference between a servant, slave and an heir. Now for the answer! “**Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants [old and new]; the one from the Mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage [slavery], which is Agar [Hagar]**” (Galatians 4:24).

Paul clearly separates *The Old* and *New Covenants* (Law of Moses and Law of Christ). One is to bondage or slavery.

In Greek the word “allegory” means “what to do” or “a constant harangue.” It signifies “one is a servant” or “in slavery and needs to be told everything and how to do it.” That is why James 2:10 states if one keeps *The Old Covenant*, (The Law of Moses) then they must keep every part of it. Why? Because to keep *The Old Covenant* you are in bondage as a servant or a slave. You must do everything without the slightest infraction. These are servants!

Now read Galatians 4:25 which simply defines *The Old Covenant* Law of Moses. “**For this Agar [Hagar] is Mount Sinai in Arabia [The Law of Moses], and answered to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage [slavery] with her children [Jews].**” This refers to The Apostle’s time period before the destruction of **the temple**. It is why Jesus said, “**The Pharisees and Sadducees sit in Moses seat.**” [This was *The Old Covenant*, The Law of Moses and Christ said] “**do what they tell you**” (Matthew 23:1-2). This was for **unconverted carnal people** (I Timothy 1:7-10). This was

The City of Jerusalem in bondage to The Law of Moses, they were in bondage (slavery) to Rome.

The Heir

Paul states Christians are not under **bondage** or **slavery** to do everything The Law of Moses reveals. Why? Because Christians are from The Spiritual Jerusalem “**in heaven**.” That is why in *Hebrews* there is a profound statement concerning *The New Covenant* and its Priesthood (Galatians 4:26-31). With The Priesthood being changed there is “made of necessity” a **change also of The Law** (Hebrews 7:12).

The Old Covenant with Moses in The Letter is bondage or required to be kept perfectly without a single omission. When you follow The Law of Moses, you are in slavery and bondage. This refers to physical Jerusalem on earth and *The Old Covenant*.

In *The New Covenant*, you, as a Christian, are now **an heir** and **no longer in slavery**. *The New Covenant* through Christ and His **administration** changes your nature by writing God's Law in your heart and mind (Hebrews 8:10). However, this Priesthood does not come from Jerusalem on earth but Jerusalem “**in heaven**” where Jesus administers The Law **spiritually**. You are no longer servants or slaves to The Letter of The Law but have liberty by Christ making you perfect through God's Holy Spirit. The change to Melchizedek in heaven makes the heavenly Jerusalem **the mother** of all Christians.

As heirs, you are free from **the demands** of The Letter in order to get salvation. Now The Law becomes a **spiritual matter** dependant on Christ by The Holy Spirit. It gets down to one accomplishment, you must become like Jesus (Ephesians 4).

No longer are your sins passed over or covered for another year from one “**atonement**” to another. Now Christ has atoned you and “**your sins are not only forgiven but forgotten.**”

Hebrews 7 in no way states that any human ministers **on earth** are now Levites. Read *Hebrews*’ answer concerning The Priesthood. Hebrews 8:4-5 reveals, “**For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.**”

There is no minister who can claim he is a Levite on this earth. Jesus is High Priest only in heaven. If Jesus, Himself were on earth, He would **not be a Priest**. On earth **only** The True Levites can serve in **the earthly temple**. When Christ returns He will have Levites, not Christian ministers, serving in **the temple** and The Levites will receive the tithes.

Christians, as **heirs**, worship God in the heavenly temple, a spiritual matter and are no longer in bondage to The Letter of The Law. The Law is spiritual (Romans 7:14). Christian’s sins are forgiven through Christ. You are in God’s **kingdom** as His sons and, therefore, no longer servants.

Then, Hebrews 8:13 ends the matter of *The Old and New Covenant* by saying *The Old* is aging and ready to vanish. Christians are now heirs and no longer **servants** in God’s **kingdom**. This heavenly Jerusalem is free and not under **bondage** or **slavery**.

Then Galatians 4:30 declares you cannot be under **two covenants**. If you believe you are to keep The Law of Moses and have God’s Law written in your heart and mind, it is an impossibility. You cannot put old wine and new wine together. Plainly, Paul said, “**Cast out the bondwoman** [servant and her son].” *The Old Cov-*

enant of The Law of Moses cannot make a person an heir. The Old Covenant can only make one a servant and therefore can never be an heir!" How clear and simple! Then Paul solidifies this point in Galatians 4:31. **"So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman [slave], but of the free [New Covenant]."**

Paul issues a warning to those who want to be circumcised. Why is this? **"Behold, I Paul say unto you [Christians], that if ye be circumcised, Christ profits you nothing."** Your sins are not forgiven and you cannot be an heir. This is as simple as it gets.

Now to put the final end to *The Old Covenant for Christians*. **"For I testify [witness] again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law."** There it is! Christians are **not** required to be circumcised and do the whole Law because, then, you as a Christian cannot be an **heir** to Christ. It is The Holy Spirit only, which can write God's Law in your heart and mind.

The Old and New Covenants are **two separate and different contracts**. You cannot combine them. One makes you a servant and can never make you an heir. The "Old" tells you what to do, as "a harangue" and the other gives you God's **"righteousness."** *The New Covenant* cleans your nature to be like Christ and God, The Father. As your Father makes you His sons, like Christ, you become an **heir** of God's **kingdom**.

Galatians 4:5 reveals now, under *The New Covenant*, you are adopted from flesh to be **"spirit"** as God's very sons and **heirs** to His Glorious Kingdom.

With the conclusion of The Acts 15 **"doctrine changes,"** The Jewish persecution ceased. The Jews were no longer a Christian

problem after 50 A.D. Now a new persecution entered The Church of God.

False Teachers

In Matthew 24 Jesus warned The Disciples that many false teachers or ministers would come into **the church**.

Christ said, “**For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive you**” Matthew 24:5. Jesus is talking to His Disciples warning them not to be deceived.

These false teachers admitted Christ was The Messiah but would deceive many. This isn't concerning the future. This warning was directed to Christ's Disciples.

The Church of God was now attacked by new teachings not of Christ. Paul warned the same thing in Ephesus (Acts 20: 29-31). This prophecy becomes significant later in *The Book of Revelation*. Some in Corinth were even claiming to be Apostles but were false Apostles (II Corinthians 11:13-14).

As you read the rest of *The Bible*, Christianity is constantly attacked by people like Simon Magus and many others who were Gentiles, claiming to be Jews (Revelation 2:9). A falling away from the truth escalated especially from 50 A.D. onward.

CHAPTER 33

THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST

After The Epistle of Galatians settles the question of The Old Covenant, then in Ephesians, Colossians and Philippians Paul concentrates on The New Covenant. These epistles were written while Paul was in prison.

FAITH DELIVERED TO THE SAINTS

The Book of Jude issues a warning. “Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you...and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.” (Jude 3).

In Jude’s day Christianity was under such attack and deception that Jude had to plead to fellow-Christians **to return to the faith** originally delivered to **the saints**.

Paul, being imprisoned, was also concerned about *The Gospel of Christ*. In *Ephesians*, *Colossians* and *Philippians*, he writes he is deeply worried about the original faith he had delivered to the saints.

Ephesians 1:1: Paul directs this *epistle* to **the saints** and **faithful**. Paul continues and reminds them that God had predestined or pre-determined a plan to adopt everyone from human parentage and make everyone His children. Making you God’s very sons. Why? Because God is love (I John 4:8) and therefore gives Him great

pleasure (Ephesians 1:4-5). This is God's very purpose. It is God's **will** or **testimony**. This is God's **promise** or "**written will**" that you become Holy and without blame before Him (Ephesians 1:4). God is love and therefore has put this pre-planned "**will**" in force, which God, also, stated in The Abrahamic Covenant. God's purpose is to be "all and in all" (I Corinthians 15:28). Christians are to be Holy and without blemish "in Christ."

Even though God makes mankind His sons, like Christ, His purpose is **for everyone** to be like him. That is why Ephesians 3:15 declares that the entire family in heaven and earth is named after God. The Greek for "family" is "patria" or "father." God is your Father and everyone will eventually carry His name, God, just as children carry their earthly father's name.

What is the requirement in order to be a Christian? You must be Holy and without blemish with God's "love." When does this occur? Paul relates this truth of God's "will" or "testament" is a mystery (Ephesians 1:9-12). It is only revealed to His **saints** and **faithful** ones. This is the faith Jude was referring to in his *epistle*. When does this predestined plan take place? It comes to fruition, when in the dispensation of times, when all things in Christ takes place in everyone (in heaven and earth). Paul wrote of this time and the process in I Corinthians 15:21-28.

The word "dispensation" in English merely means to "dispense" or "give something." God's "**will**" or "testament" in Greek conveys "everything in God's household." God intends to give everyone all the riches of His "**glory**" ("doxa" in Greek) and riches in God's house. Wow!

As heirs, you receive these spiritual benefits by Christ with the seal of God's Holy Spirit. This Holy Spirit is the "**earnest**" or

“**down payment**” of your inheritance (Ephesians 1:11-14).

This is the **faith** delivered to the **saints** and **faithful** ones. It is “**a given**” or “**a promised right**.”

How do you become Holy and without blame with “agapè love?” Paul finalizes the answer to being Holy in *Ephesians*. “**Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, into the measure of the stature of the fulness [completeness – wholeness] of Christ**” (Ephesians 4:13).

This is **the faith of what a Christian is**. Regardless, whether you are a woman or a man, or an Israelite, Gentile or whatever, you are all to be like Jesus, as a Son of God (Galatians 3:28-29).

This is why Paul wrote *Ephesians*. He wanted to be sure, while he was in prison, that they remained faithful to Christ as was delivered to **the saints**.

The Mind Of Christ

While in prison, Paul continues the subject of being “*in Christ*.” Paul declared he didn’t care what the internal motive of a preacher was as long as he preached Christ “in you” (Philippians 1:18).

Then Paul reveals what Jesus is like. He brings up The Mind of Christ. Many misunderstand Paul’s meaning. Paul was revealing, Christ chose to be a servant and help to heal all mankind. Jesus, being The Son of God, lowered Himself to **servitude**. This is The Mind of Christ (Philippians 2:5). He came not to be served, but serve. Even though He was God’s Son and had all authority from God, He always chose to be a servant (Hebrews 1:9). Christ loved

righteousness and, therefore, He chose to be a **servant**. Jesus Christ has the same “agapè love” His Father has (Hebrews 1).

Philippians reveals the true nature of Christianity. You are to give your body as a living sacrifice, as Christ did. You must mature to the measure and stature of Jesus (Romans 12:1). This is “**the faith**” and “**requirement**” of “**Christianity**.”

A New Problem

Once you come to *Colossians*, Paul is in prison and hears of a new problem taking hold in **the Christian faith**. Epaphras, their pastor and fellow servant with Paul, delivers a warning concerning The Colossians but especially to Laodicea. Because of false preachers bringing a faith, not delivered originally to “**the saints and faithful**,” people were being **mised**. Paul refers to these preachers as “**any man**” (Colossians 1:7-10). What were they preaching?

Christ In You

First and foremost Paul reveals the subject or theme in his *Colossian Epistle*. Paul covers Christ's history of being the one who forgives sin and is the fulfillment of Christianity. *Ephesians* and *Philippians* cover this truth of Christian faith. You must be “**in Christ**” to be **saved**. Paul explains The Mystery of Christ in Colossians 1:27.

Christ “**in you**” or becoming like Christ, is God's **purpose** to be “all and in all.” Then Paul clearly relates what Christianity is. “**Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we [ministers] may present everyman perfect in Christ Jesus**” (Colossians 1:28). This is Paul's warn-

ing to “**any man**” preaching; they had better be preaching **the Christian requirement** to have Christ “in you” and that is all that is required. This is the entire message to The Colossians and Laodicians. The Laodicians had lost this truth in Revelation 3. What did The Colossians and Laodicians loose sight of in relationship to Christianity?

Paul reiterates, “**For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea** (Colossians 2:1). Paul, while in prison, was seriously worried about those who had not known him personally. What was he worried about? “**That their hearts [desires] might be comforted, being knit together in love [agapè], and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God [Christ “in you”], and of The Father, and of Christ**” (Colossians 2:2). Then he concludes the subject of *Colossians* with this statement: “**In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge**” (Colossians 2:3).

The main subject of Paul’s warning is written in Colossians 2:4. “**And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.**” There it is. Paul concludes his warning in Colossians 2:6, “**As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him.**” Since all riches and wisdom is Christ “in you” it is the only Christian requirement. To be like Christ.

Any Man

Why does Paul call these misleading preachers “any man?” In Greek, the word used for “man” is “anthropos.” This is “man in his natural state of the animal kingdom.” Rather than inspired preachers with God’s Holy Spirit, these are preachers merely teaching Christ from their own human ideas. Paul warns about

this type of preaching, even referring to himself and other Christian ministers, lest they falter. Paul declares, “**For other foundation can no man (anthropos) lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ**” (I Corinthians 3:11). How clear and simple!

The Corinthians were breaking up into individual denominations by picking their favorite minister. Some preferred Appolos and Paul said he was glad he hadn't baptized them. Paul, including himself, said that “**no man**,” the natural man, can preach any requirement for Christianity, **other than** Christ “**in you**,” which is God's **mystery**. Paul warns if anyone preaches anything else besides Christ “**in you**,” they will end up in The Lake of Fire and be tried, but eventually, they, too, will be saved (I Corinthians 3:12-15). What were these fake carnal men preaching?

Three False Preachers

The first false preaching was a man advocating human philosophy requiring “**human efforts**” in religious rituals that were man-made ideas of the world (Colossians 2:8).

The second false preacher was of “**the circumcision party**” commanding the keeping of The Holy Days, Sabbaths and new moons which were only meant to be shadows or a prophecy concerning Christ. That is why Paul reminded them that the body was only of Christ (Colossians 2:14-17). These days were never required for salvation.

The third false preacher was “**beguiling them by “will” worship**” or “**punishing the flesh**” and, also “**worshipping angels.**” This was the penetration of Agnostic “**teachings.**”

Paul had to warn about “**this misleading teaching**” by concluding

in Colossians 2:9, “**For in him [Christ] dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.**”

All three *Epistles* – *Ephesians*, *Philippians* and *Colossians* cover “**the faith once delivered to the saints**” which is Christ “**in you.**” *Colossians* introduces a **new deception** concerning salvation. *Romans* and *Galatians* settle the problems of circumcision and keeping The Law of Moses in Acts 15. Some of “**the circumcision tried**” to steer Christians back to the works of The Law by requiring Sabbaths, Holy Days and new moons upon Christians for salvation and attempting to replace Christ “**in you.**” However, two new false doctrines were being taught as Christian requirements, replacing Christ “**in you**” – The Hope of Glory. One was “philosophical” and the other “will worship” or “denying the flesh.” Both were **worldly** and devised by human ideas or logic. Paul stated all the riches are “in Christ” who inherited all from The Father (Hebrews 1:1-3). Now, to examine *The Gospel of Christ*.

I Corinthians 15:1-28

Paul declares in I Corinthians 15:1, “**Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the Gospel [good news] which I preached unto you, which also ye have received and wherein ye stand.**” What *gospel* is this? Mark 1:1 states, “**The beginning of the gospel [good news] of Jesus Christ the Son of God.**”

Mark relates *the gospel* or good news of God’s **kingdom** begins with Jesus Christ. Let Paul explain how Christ establishes God’s **kingdom**.

Purpose Of Christ

In Matthew 18:11 Jesus said He came to restore what was lost.

What was lost? Genesis 3:24 reads: **“So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.”** [Why]? **“And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of Life, and Eat, and live forever”** (Genesis 3:22).

Jesus came to restore **salvation** with His death. Who is to be restored to life or salvation? I John 4:14 reveals the answer. **“And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Savior of the world.”** Jesus, The Christ, The Savior came to restore **salvation to the entire world**. How does Jesus do it? How does Christ save the world? Paul explains The Gospel of Christ in I Corinthians 15:1-28.

After Christ's resurrection everyone was expecting God's **kingdom** to come very soon. That is why The Disciples asked Him if God, at that time, would restore **the kingdom** as Malachi prophesied. Jesus said only The Father knew when **the kingdom** would come (Acts 1).

In I Corinthians 15 Paul included prophecy because some thought there was no resurrection. Paul explains the entire **order of salvation** by Christ to restore what was lost. To answer those in doubt of the resurrection Paul declared, **“But now is Christ risen from the dead [Paul witnessed it], and become the firstfruits [Tree of Life] of them that slept “[are dead]”** (I Corinthians 15:20).

Then Paul prophesies in an amazing statement. In fact, this statement shakes the Christian world, but it is **The Word of God**. **“For as in Adam all die, even in Christ shall all be made alive”** (I Corinthians 15:22).

Since many do not wish **the salvation** of the world to be true, an argument with God's "word" begins over the word "all." Does it really mean "all?" After all, I John 4:14 states that is why Jesus came to restore **salvation** to the world. Don't you believe God through His Son, Jesus, can do it?

Does "**all**" mean "**all**" or not? If "**all**" does not mean "**all**," then what does "**all**" mean? You have been given proof in the previous chapter what "all" means. The word "all" in Greek is defined as "being in the aorist subjunctive mood." There is no grammatical English words to convey this meaning into English from The Greek language.

"All" certainly does not, **only**, mean "all." Its definition is **far more powerful**. The word "all" carries the meaning of "an order" or "conditions to be met." If these conditions occur, **the prophecy** is "**absolute**" and, therefore, **guaranteed**. This statement by Paul clarifies if the prophecy fails, God ultimately guarantees it will, eventually, come to reality. "All" doesn't just mean "all," but it is guaranteed in the future even if the prophecy fails. Paul explains the exact order, whereby, each and every man is **saved**. Didn't Paul in I Corinthians 15:23 just state that **every** man would be saved? He certainly did. "Every man" is the context of Paul's subject. "All" or "everyone" who died from the time of Adam and Eve will be **saved**. Paul goes into greater detail that "**all**," meaning "**everyone**," will "**be saved**" in Christ! However, certain conditions must be first met.

After that, Christ's **resurrection**, then the first resurrection of Christ's Bride, and, then – **comes "the end."** Paul, in context, is explaining how Christ gives **salvation** to **everyone**. You must follow the context or subject in every chapter you read. "**Then cometh the end, when he [Christ] shall have delivered up the**

kingdom to God, even the Father; when he [Jesus] shall have put down all rule and all authority and power” (I Corinthians 15:24). Christ cannot turn God’s **kingdom** back to Him until all powers, in the world, are put down, including death.

Read carefully and stay with the subject of “an orderly resurrection” of **everyone being saved**. The next verse is vital to the subject of **the resurrection**. Read it carefully and prayerfully. **“For he [Christ] must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet”** (I Corinthians 15:25). Do you get what Paul is telling you? Until every enemy of God is destroyed, Jesus cannot give **the kingdom back to God, The Father**. The next verse answers when **“all”** of Adam and Eve’s children will be saved which is why Christ came in the first place (I John 4:14). Jesus will not fail. That is why Jesus said of the ones God has given Him, that none will be lost, except Judas who was prophesied to be condemned (John 5:37-39). Jesus states when God turns over a person, they will be **resurrected at the last resurrection**. God has no need to burn them and have them destroyed. God is not The God of **the dead** but of **The Living**. Satan is “the god” of the dead.

Jesus will not fail to save the world, but it is also, His Father’s (God’s) **“will.”** **“Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth”** (I Timothy 2:4)?

It is God’s **“will”** to **save everyone**. God also **wills** that **everyone** will come to **the knowledge of the truth** or **repent**.

Christ will succeed and so will God, The Father succeed. If their decisions, plans or **“wills”** do not come to pass or succeed, then **“not one prophecy”** can be meaningful.

I Corinthians 15 absolutely answers the order or conditions by

which “**all**” will be **saved** “in Christ.” “**The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death**” (I Corinthians 15:26). This does not mean from this point on, there is no death. Remember, Jesus must continue to reign until “**all death**” is destroyed. No death can remain. If one person is dead, then, Jesus cannot turn **the kingdom** back to God. Until all death is removed – God’s **kingdom** cannot come. That is the context of I Corinthians 15. The resurrection to life must happen to “**all**” of Adam’s children “in Christ.” How loving and wonderful is God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, The Christ. Now, Paul concludes stating God’s real purpose. Paul declared when all of God’s enemies are destroyed, “**including death, those who are made alive in Christ,**” then, and only then, **Jesus turns all authority back to The Father. Then God can be “all and in all**” (I Corinthians 15:27-28). The Gospel of Christ is completed and The New Heaven and New Earth can begin (Revelation 21 and 22).

God’s Purpose

Some believe God’s purpose is to build a family. I Corinthians 15:28 reveals that this is not so. God’s **kingdom** is much more. God does build a family to rule His **kingdom**, but God’s real purpose is to be “**all and in all.**” Unless God is “**in everyone**” as His Son is, then you cannot be Holy and without blemish. With God and Jesus being “in you” then God can be “**one**” with “**all.**” That is God’s beautiful and loving **plan** and **purpose** for “all” His creation. God can then give salvation because everyone will be like God and His goodness.

That is why Paul said in Romans that **the entire creation groans** for the manifestation of The Sons of God. “**God may be “all in all.”**”

CHAPTER 34

MYSTERY OF INIQUITY

The Epistles of Thessalonians are credited with being older than any of Paul's *epistles*. The subject is **The Return of Christ** but Paul states to let "no man" deceive you for Christ cannot come until a great falling away occurs and "the man of sin" (anti-Christ) is revealed (II Thessalonians 2:1-3).

The Right Time

"And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time" (II Thessalonians 2:6). This man of sin is held back "in time" until the appropriate day when The Father decides when The Son returns.

Remember, only God, The Father knows or will decide when Christ returns. This is exactly what Jesus told His Disciples before He was resurrected (Act 1:7).

This **man of sin** will not be made manifest until God decides it is the right time, but Paul continues by making an amazing statement. **"For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way"** (II Thessalonians 2:7).

Paul warned *a deceptive gospel* was already being taught. This *false gospel* teaches the resurrection **"has already happened"**

and therefore, God's **kingdom** was already here!

Shocking as it may seem, **the faith delivered to the saints** had already begun to be distorted. Through the rest of *The New Testament* the remaining *epistles* and *pastoral letters* deal with **false teaching**. This false teaching did not come from The Jews but from The Gentiles.

Paul in I Thessalonians 2:14 made a clear distinction between The Jews persecuting Jewish Christians as opposed to Gentiles persecuting The Gentile Thessalonians. "**For ye, brethren [Thessalonians], became ye followers of the churches of God which in Judaea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews.**"

This was not a Jewish persecution, but from The Gentiles. It is The Gentiles bringing in "**false teachings.**" The **sin of iniquity** is of Gentile origin.

The rest of *The New Testament* focuses on **the man of sin**. Remember, Jesus warned His Disciples, after the destruction of **the temple** by Titus in 70 A.D., false preachers claiming to be of Christ would deceive many Christians. Paul warned this Mystery of Iniquity already was in progress.

Paul in his letters, to Timothy and Titus, had to warn his true fellow-Christians to remain **faithful** and not to digress from what they were originally taught. In Timothy's case he was an Evangelist who had been "**prophesied**" as to his commission.

Paul told him to study *the scriptures* that he had known from his childhood which are inspired of God (II Timothy 3:15-17). By following Paul's instruction the man of God is furnished in "all

good works.”

Speaking to Titus, Paul commands him to appoint elders who will keep each city in Crete so they will not lack in **any truth**. Paul reiterates the specific qualifications of a Bishop or Overseer of the **churches** who will be **faithful in the truth**.

Finally, *The Epistle to The Hebrews* gives a summary of Christ’s superior Priesthood over The Levitical Priesthood. The Levitical Priesthood could not change human nature, which was weak, but *The New Covenant* of Christ “in you” can change human nature.

Hebrews 12 sends a warning that if *The True Gospel* isn’t followed, God will bring His **wrath** upon you. *Hebrews* concludes warning Christians to remain **faithful** because God is “**a consuming fire**” (The Lake of Fire) and chastises every son He loves (Hebrews 12:29 and Hebrews 12:6-11).

James, Peter And John

All three pastoral letters dealt with **the falling away from the truth** or **the faith** delivered to **the saints**. What was that faith? It’s as simple as God making mankind into His image so He can be “all and in all” (Genesis 1:26 and I Corinthians 15:28).

James was concerned some were teaching “faith without works” and it was **all right** to sin. This was an **Agnostic teaching** telling The Christians “the more sin – the better” and “if you sin – it didn’t matter.”

The truth is, The Law, in *The New Covenant*, is on a higher level or has a superior standard. Rather than The Letter of The Law which cannot bring salvation because the weakness in the flesh

only results in death. The Spirit of The Law demands that human nature keep The Law within their hearts. **Not having any sin** is the goal.

Under Christ, The Law is magnified and is a **spiritual matter** (Romans 7:14 and Isaiah 42:21). James demands “**faith with works.**” This is a **circumcision of the heart** and not merely “**the flesh.**” James then declares that “**faith with works**” is **true faith.**

Peter

Peter's two *epistles* deal with “**a more sure word of prophecy**” (II Peter 1:19). In Greek, the word “sure” signifies “certainty.” II Peter 1:20 warns God's “**word**” in prophecy should not be interpreted by personal or private interpretation. Why? Because prophecy or God's “**word**” is inspired by God's Holy Spirit. That is why in II Corinthians 10:5, Paul warns all human imaginations are to be cast down. Subject yourself to The Mind of Christ. *Scripture* is not to be interpreted since it is “**God-breathed**” and its mystery will be revealed to you as you pray, study and grow in God's maturity.

Peter declares you should stick to what The Holy Prophets and The Apostles of Christ teach. “**Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last day [Roman Empire] scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation**” (II Peter 3:3-4). When is Christ coming? Peter gives the answer. “**The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**” (II Peter 3:9).

The previous verse in II Peter 3:8 states “a day” to God, can be “a thousand-year period.”

Remember, Peter stated that in his time they had “a more certain word of prophecy.” Peter relates that Jesus can come thousands of years later because God intends to have “all” come to repentance. Never forget, Christ came to save the world (I John 4:14).

These *epistles* written between 60 to 66 A.D. reveals the condition of **the church** before the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Before **the temple** was destroyed, The Church of God was under attack by many false preachers. The falling away from **the faith** once delivered was in great jeopardy.

By the end of The First Century, The Christian Church was in confusion concerning **the faith** of Christ.

John To Jude

By the time *I, II and III John* were written, The Christian Church fell into deception when The Gnostics were teaching Jesus was not a human being when He came in the flesh. Christology became important to Christianity instead of **the faith** delivered to **the saints**.

Now the theological question was – who, and what, was Jesus? Was He human or not? Christology remains a cardinal point in **schools of theology**, today. Christianity has become secondary to who was The Son of God. Same question Satan asked of Christ in Matthew 4. Here is John’s answer: “**Hereby, know ye the spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God**” (I John 4:2). God’s Holy Spirit reveals to Christians, Jesus, when He was in the flesh, was indeed human.

John declares in I John 4:3, “**And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh [human] is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of an anti-Christ, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.**”

The spirit of anti-Christ was already present in John's day. The first century wasn't even over and **the spirit of anti-Christ** was already being preached in The Christian Churches. The Christian Church was headed for Babylon.

It was getting so bad that Diotrefes was kicking true Christians out of **the church**. In fact, the name Diotrefes is a synonym for “friend of Zeus.” Paganism was entering The Churches of God.

Jude

By the time Jude wrote his *epistle*, “**demons within**,” false preachers started to totally mislead Christians away from **the faith** delivered to **the saints**. Read all of *Jude*.

Christians were being deceived by ego-driven preachers filling their own pockets. The Churches of God were becoming very **lucrative** for their leaders. The Pharisees, Sadducees and Priests bilked The Jews the same way.

Jude said “**true**” Christians should try to save some of those who were deceived by pulling them out of The Lake of Fire. In other words, if you try to help others, they can escape The Lake of Fire. Those, “**too far gone**” should be disfellowshipped and be left to their own penalties which meant, after The Lake of Fire, they would be wandering stars being tormented in darkness.

From The Day of Pentecost to the end of the first century, **the**

church was being deceived and corrupted.

The last *New Testament Book*, *Revelation*, caps the issue of church corruption. It became so bad that John, the last serving Apostle, is told to write *The Book of Revelation* by Jesus, Himself through **an angel**.

Warning By Christ

Without *The Book of Revelation* being in *The Bible*, Christians would not know when Christ would **return**. Because multiple doctrines denying The True Messiah had taken possession of Christianity, Jesus Himself warned The Seven Churches in Southern Turkey (Asia Minor). These **seven churches** were all Christ's Churches (Revelation 1:4).

Then, in Revelation 1:7, **the angel** sent from Jesus to John issues this warning: “**Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindred's of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.**” Jesus reveals this **revelation** to His **seven churches** and issues this warning against everyone who is His enemy. This prophecy is written to all Christ's enemies, as well, as a warning to His **seven churches** which remain until His second coming. This book is a prophecy written to His **seven churches**, as well as, Israel and everyone with The Mark of The Beast. This prophecy is a warning to all who do not heed “**the words**” of this prophecy (Revelation 22:19).

The Seven Churches

By the end of The First Century, Christian Churches were each holding to a diversity of doctrines. Some even allowed Jezebel

or Baal worship. Christianity by 100 A.D. was a mixture of **the truth plus agnostic and pagan teachings**. Nevertheless, all these churches were Christian and Jesus, The Christ, was dwelling in their midst (Revelation 1:13).

Not one of **the churches** was gifted by God, as in the days of The Twelve Apostles. The most faithful of the seven churches was The Philadelphians who only had a little strength (Revelation 3:8). The Churches of God were corrupted just as Israel was. Only 144,000 of The Tribes of Israel are considered God's servants just before The Return of Jesus. Read Revelation 7.

The remnant of Israel, **the seven churches** and the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles are "**mixed doctrinally**" and in Babylon. Romans 11 reveals Israel, as a nation, will not be saved until Christ **returns**. Only a remnant will be saved, as well as the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles. These are Christ's two servants in Revelation 7 and 14.

Then Jesus decrees a warning to His **servants**, Israel and The Churches of God in Revelation 18:1-3. Christ declares all nations and the entire world have become drunk with the wine of Babylon. Here is His "**command**" in Revelation 18:4 to His two servants, His people: "**And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, come out of her [Babylon] my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.**"

Sadly, it takes The Great Tribulation for **The 144,000 Israelites** to be saved as well as **the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles** to be saved (Revelation 7:4).

At the end of *The Book of Revelation*, Jesus again warns, "**And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give ev-**

ery man according as his work shall be” (Revelation 22:12).

As Jesus concludes this prophecy to the world, He warns He is ready to come quickly, at anytime. You had better heed this **prophecy of the seven seals, the seven trumpets and the seven last plagues.**

By the end of The First Century after Christ’s death, The Christian Churches, as well as Israel, and the whole world (of those) who have The Mark of The Beast are in Babylon. Read *The Great Apostasy*.

Jesus is ready to return, but **when will that be?** What must happen before The Second Coming of Christ? It is time to conclude *God’s Story* – from *Genesis* to *Revelation*. You are about to witness **God’s One Story**, *The Bible* and discover the story is actually all about **a marriage.**

CHAPTER 35

THE WEDDING FEAST

Did you know Jesus, The Christ summarized the entire story of *The Bible* in one parable? This parable is written, so many cannot quite make sense of it. God purposely blinds people so as not to hold them responsible for their sins which they do not completely understand (John 9:41).

In Ephesians 5:25 Paul declared “husbands, love your wives.” The word for “love” in this case is “agapè” which is a special type of “love.” Paul describes this love is so strong, one would give their very lives for them, as Christ did for all mankind. Paul states, “**For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church**” (Ephesians 5:29). Finalizing, Paul relates, “**This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and The Church**” (Ephesians 5:32).

The Great Mystery

God's Story, The Bible, is purposely written as a **mystery** or **puzzle** (Isaiah 28:9-13). He keeps many individuals blind so as not to hold them responsible for sins they do not understand until they are ready to repent (Matthew 13). It is time in this story to put this **Mystery of God** together. All, you have previously read, is brought together by solving this Mystery of A Marriage. *God's Story of The Bible* is **all about a marriage**.

Marriage in Israel had three components. The marriage is insti-

tuted by a contract between the parents of **the groom** and parents of **the bride**. At this point the marriage is not finalized but begins the engagement period. The engagement period is a time to get ready for The Marriage Feast. During this time both the groom and the bride must prepare for The Wedding Feast, which allows the bride and groom to consummate the marriage after The Wedding Feast.

There is usually a best friend of the groom, the best man, who is responsible to inform the guests concerning The Wedding Feast and how to prepare for the feast.

The best man reveals how to dress for this wedding. This occurs during the engagement period. The groom and the bride are, then, accepted as husband and wife by society, who hear their vows, which is followed with a feast. They are then married and then come under God's huppa or protection.

Paul said this type of marriage is a Great Mystery and is the story of Christ and The Church. This is *God's Story* from *Genesis* to *Revelation* and will be proved **biblically**.

A Royal Marriage

This parable is about a marriage which is a Royal Marriage. This marriage is instituted by a King-God Almighty. This parable is written in Matthew 22:1-14. Do you really perceive how wonderful this marriage really is?

The King, God, The Father has a Kingdom to share with His Son, Jesus and His Bride. Christ is a Prince and His Bride a Princess. This marriage is beyond Salvation. This marriage lasts forever. This marriage constitutes a Royal Marriage, "**eternally**," where

The Prince and Princess share The Father's Kingdom forever in Paradise, or God's **rest**. God has a great and wonderful **plan**. This marriage, which is in the future, is prophetic and will one day become history. This marriage begins in The Garden of Eden and ends in Paradise, a new Garden of Eden. This is God's "**rest**." The consummation of this marriage is The Wedding Feast or God's "**rest**" where The King, The Father has prepared this paradise for His Son and His Bride. This marriage covers the entire *Bible* from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22. It is truly *God's Story*.

Three Invitations

Matthew 22:1-14 manifests there are three times in world prophecy when God announces His invitations to the world. Finally, the entire world is invited to The Wedding Feast. Matthew 22:2 reveals God's **kingdom**, which is presently in heaven, is like a Royal Marriage:

- 1 Then, God sent His servants, The Prophets, to call them to the feast, but those bidden would not come (Matthew 22:3). This invitation covers the time from Adam and Eve until Noah's flood.
- 2 The next invitation to The Wedding Feast is after the flood until Christ's birth, as a human being (Matthew 22:4).
- 3 Finally, a third announcement is made concerning The Marriage Feast, but this time there is no special or chosen group to invite. This announcement covers all humanity, The Israelites and The Gentiles. No conditions are set but even the bad are invited to The Wedding, as well as, the good. This means The Whole Christian World. The King sends invitations by His servants, The Apos-

bles, to all they find, the good and bad. At The Wedding Feast those attending had to have “the proper wedding garment” (Matthew 22:9-14).

One guest was not properly dressed for The Wedding and was thrown out into outer darkness where there will be **weeping** and **gnashing of teeth**. The parable concludes with this statement. **“For many are called, but few are chosen.”**

This applies only to The Wedding Feast where **“only a few”** of all who are invited will be allowed to attend. The invitation to The First Resurrection will be for The Bride. Why? Others who are left out of New Jerusalem will be wailing and weeping because they missed the invitation to The Wedding Feast. Christianity had corrupted itself by the end of the first century and was a mixture of **“good”** and **“bad”** just as **“the marriage parable”** explains. Now, to examine these prophetic invitations to The Wedding Feast, individually.

God's Marriage

The first marriage, which was a Godly marriage, started in The Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve were married by God, but the wedding feast as yet, had no invitations. As yet, Adam and Eve had no children. In fact, Adam and Eve themselves weren't ready for **the marriage feast**. That is why they were both naked and didn't even realize it.

The Pharisees asked Christ, **“Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife?”** [for any cause] (Mark 10:2). Jesus inquired by asking, **“What did Moses command you?”** (Mark 10:3). The Pharisees answered, **“Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away”** (Mark 10:4). Jesus retorts, **“For the hardness**

of your heart he wrote you this precept” (Mark 10:5). This was an amazing answer by Jesus.

Moses clearly states, according to The Letter of The Law, a divorce is permissible in Deuteronomy 24:1. The Pharisees wanted to know if one can divorce for any reason, whatsoever. Christ follows stating that in the beginning, “ marriage was different” (Mark 10:6-12).

Moses allowed divorce because of **a wrong heart**. Adam had to have a right heart in his marriage because Jesus said that first marriage between Adam and Eve was different from modern-day marriages before divorce was lawful. What is the difference?

The Original Marriage

God, in the first marriage, took Eve from Adam’s very bones. This marriage was a natural union where Eve came out of Adam. That is why they were called by the man’s name because Adam and Eve were of the same bone and flesh (Genesis 2:21-25). They both came from Adam.

Paul, in Ephesians, reveals, “**no man hates his own flesh.**” Adam and Eve were bound “**till death do them part.**” Paul states this is “**a great mystery**” concerning Christ and The Church. Adam was not deceived, but Eve was deceived when she ate of The Tree of Good and Evil, so Adam is misunderstood by so many Christians. At this point, Adam could have said, “Eve, I’m not going to eat of the fruit of The Tree of Good and Evil because I know I will die as God said. I am going to eat of The Tree of Life.”

Why then did Adam follow Eve and eat the fruit which he knew would kill him? Romans 5:14 answers the question. “**Neverthe-**

less, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come." This refers to The Christ. Adam died for his wife, Eve – just as Jesus died for His Bride, The Church. This is The Great Mystery.

Both Adam and Eve were of the same bone and flesh just as Jesus and His Bride – The Church, are of Christ's "**body.**" No man hates his own flesh. This is the answer concerning divorce.

The wrong heart in Moses' day allowed him to allow or permit divorce. Why? Because "**a real marriage**" made by God has the man and woman bound as "**one flesh.**" That is why they have "**agàpè**" **love** for each other.

The trouble with divorce is Moses allowed it because they had a wrong heart. The question was, "could they divorce for any cause?" Contemporary psychology of today falsely believes people can stay married based upon passion and compatibility.

In Greek there are three Greek words for "love." "Eros" is "a love based upon passion or sex." "Philia" denotes "friendship" or "compatibility." Then "agàpè" love is of such concern that one dies for the other because they have grown together as if of the same flesh. They are inseparable. Only death can part them. That is why Adam chose to die for Eve and Christ chose to die for His Bride, His "**body.**" "**What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder**" (Mark 10:9). If God has joined "two together as one flesh," then only death can separate them. Now, the question is, how does God join a man and woman together?

If those who have grown to have "agàpè" love for each other, they cannot divorce (Deuteronomy 24:1). Only death can separate

them. That is the real answer for divorce. Passion and compatibility just will not hack it.

That is the way Godly marriage originated and the only marriage which can be eternal – without death. This is the answer by Christ to The Pharisees. Now understand what God really requires of Christians to become Christ's Bride.

One Must Be Worthy

To be worthy you must have “**a right heart.**” What is a right heart? I John 4:8 reveals God is “**agàpè**” **love**. This is God's heart. Every desire and thought, as well as God's actions, are motivated by “**agàpè**” **love**. That is why John states in the beginning of I John 4:8, “**He that loveth not, [agàpè love] knoweth not God!**” Until a Christian's life has grown to have agàpè love, that Christian doesn't even know the **true God!** Wow! That is frightening. That is why **continual spiritual growth** is necessary to begin to have “**agàpè**” **love**. You may believe you are doing all God requires of you for **salvation** and still not be allowed into The Wedding Feast, which is God's “**rest**” for eternity.

I Corinthians 13:1-13

Paul explains God's gifts in I Corinthians 12 to 15. In ending I Corinthians 12:31, he announces, **of all** the gifts God gives to Christians, there is “**one** that is more excellent than any other gifts He can give.” What is this gift?

“Gift” in Greek is “**charis.**” This is where you get the word “**charisma.**” God grants all humanity some “**gifts**” or “**abilities.**” Gifts are presents. No one has earned them. At times you may say it was the way that person was born. God gives “**gifts**” by birth

and also bestows **spiritual gifts** or His riches upon Christ's **body**, "**the church**." Paul reveals one particular spiritual gift above all the other spiritual gifts! Why are these riches of Christ more excellent than any other? The first few verses list all the human activities a human can do. The ability to speak in various languages (or angelic) or whether one understands prophecies, mysteries, knowledge, faith, giving to the poor or giving your body to be burned. Some may have these gifts, but without "agapè" **love**, you have **nothing**. Why is "agapè" love so special? You are about to find out.

Finally he answers why this gift from God is more excellent than any other. In I Corinthians 13:8 Paul declares, "**love never fails!**" "Agapè" love is forever. "Agapè" is eternal. "Agapè" love never ends. "Agapè" is what God is (I John 4:8).

That is why Adam died for his wife and that is why Christ died for His Bride, The Church. This is The Great Mystery, "agapè" **love** gives **salvation!** Read *the scriptures* to prove it. Colossians 3:14 reveals, "**Put on charity, [agapè love] which is the bond of perfectness!**" Jesus said, "**be ye perfect as your Father in Heaven**" (Matthew 5:48).

What makes God perfect? God is "**love**" (I John 4:8). Perfection comes from God because God is "love." How can Christ "**in you**" save you? Prove it scripturally. It is written in Romans 5:5, "**Because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us.**" This is God's "gift" given to The Bride.

What The Israelites lacked in keeping God's commandments is "**a right heart**" (Deuteronomy 5:29). It is what the rich man lacked when he only kept **the commandments** in The Letter (Matthew

19:21).

Salvation can only be given when God's "agapè" **love** is in your heart. Kind after kind, God is making man in His image, to be exactly like Him (Genesis 1:26). God would never give this gift of **eternal life** unless you become exactly like Him. This is God's **purpose**. God is to be "all in all" (I Corinthians 15:28). God would never approve a marriage of His Son unless His Bride is exactly like His Son and as He is.

That is why Moses permitted divorce in The Law (Deuteronomy 24:1). The Letter of The Law was written for "**unrighteous sinners**" (I Timothy 1:7-10).

This is the reason Jesus told The Pharisees and His Disciples that Godly marriage did not permit divorce except for "fornication." They replied in shock, "then why should anyone marry?" They did not have "agapè" **love** at that time. The Holy Spirit wasn't given till Pentecost (Matthew 19:10).

God's Law is perfect Holy and **good**. That is why *The Old Covenant* permitted divorce – they had a wrong heart. That is why God, in The Garden of Eden, had two trees. The Tree of Life to receive God's Holy Spirit, which is God's **love** and The Tree of Good and Evil. In Genesis 1:31, God saw everything He created in the six days was very good!

The Tree of Life led to salvation and if a wrong choice was made, The Tree of Good and Evil (man's work) led to **confusion** and **spiritual blindness**. Being blind, God did not hold them guilty when they sinned (John 9:41).

Everything God creates, whether allowing **evil** or **good**, is the re-

sult of God's love and goodness. Are you beginning to understand God's Wedding Feast and what is required?

God's "agapè" **love** is imperative for **salvation**. To have God's love "in you," you need to continue to **grow spiritually** until you love God with all your heart, your mind, your body and your **inner being**. You must be willing to die for God. You are to love your neighbor, as yourselves. This was the same for Israel or Christianity (Deuteronomy 6:4 and Matthew 22:37-40).

This is why Christians are to be a living sacrifice, just as Christ was (Romans 12:1). The Wedding Feast cannot commence until The Groom and Bride have "agapè" **love**. Christ cannot, therefore, **return** until God's **love** is manifested for The Groom and Bride.

When Will Christ Return?

Many have attempted to predict the time of Christ's "**second coming**." When Jesus returns He resurrects His Bride (those who are asleep and those alive). There is **no time** or **date** for Christ's **return**. Jesus will only return after a certain event occurs, but has no date attached to it. When will Christ and The Bride commence God's **kingdom** and rule upon the earth?

Before Jesus was ready to go to heaven, He taught His Disciples for forty days. They asked Him a question. "**Will God, at this time, restore The Kingdom to Israel?**" Instantly, they wanted to know when Christ would **return**. Jesus said it is not in His power to know when God's **kingdom** will be restored to Israel. Only God, The Father knows when that will happen (Acts 1). Why is The Father the only one to know when Jesus **will return**? The answer is in The Marriage Feast.

Many, since then, have attempted to predict The Return of Christ. Is that possible? In *The Epistle of Thessalonians* some were saying **the resurrection** was already **past**. In 1000 A.D. the Christian community went into a frenzy waiting for Christ to come. Now, in this day, two thousand years later, many still are saying Jesus is about to come.

In 1844, The Millerites thought they knew when Christ would come so they prepared to meet Him, but were wrong. Once again they recalculated and admitted they made a mistake, but they were also wrong the second time. Another Christian Group prophesied Christ was coming in 1975. They, too, failed.

Why does anyone try to predict the second coming of Christ when Jesus said only His Father knows when Christ will come for His Bride? **Biblically**, there is no set date for Christ's second coming. Man is not God nor can he out-think God. You are about to prove the second coming of Christ only occurs because of **an event** and not some **specific date!**

Bride Of Christ

You know who The Groom is. He is The Son of God, Jesus, The Christ. But who is The Bride? Israel believes they are The Messiah's Bride. Christians believe The Church is The Bride. Who is right?

It is true, Israel is The Bride of Christ, but she was divorced because Israel committed fornication. According to The Law, once the woman is divorced, she cannot return to her first husband. How does God solve this problem? Read Deuteronomy 24.

Those who believe The Church, is The Bride, are also, confronted

with another problem. In Matthew 25, The Church is likened to Ten Virgins. None of them have committed fornication. Both are prospective Brides. Half, however, are “**wise virgins**” and the other half are “**unwise virgins.**”

The wise virgins keep their candles lit because they have sufficient oil to watch for “**the coming**” of The Groom. The unwise virgins run out of oil and they cannot see when The Groom comes. Why not?

All Ten Virgins are pure and can be married. The problem is “**half**” The Church, during the engagement period, refused to keep growing in God’s Holy Spirit to be prepared for The Wedding Feast as The Bride. Half The Church isn’t acceptable as The Bride because she refuses to keep growing in God’s Holy Spirit and come to the maturity of Christ, which is in “agapè” love with Him, as He is with her. That is why **the entire** Church of God is **not** The Bride of Christ.

That is why Ephesians 5:26-27 states, “**That he might sanctify [make Holy] and cleanse it [no sin] with the washing of water by the word [The Holy Spirit]. That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be Holy [complete] and without blemish [pure].**”

Just like Israel, only a remnant of Israel becomes *The Bride*, as well as, only a part of The Church of God is The Bride of Christ. Read all of Romans 11. There is *The Bible* answer as to who is The Bride.

Until Israel, who is a remnant and part of The Church of God, becomes **spiritually ready** with “agapè” love, they cannot be The

Bride of Christ! However, the unwise virgins can come to The Wedding Feast. Forever a bridesmaid but never a bride.

Romans 11:26 reveals during The Millennium, The Nation of Israel will be **saved**. The remainder of Israel who do not become The Bride are invited to attend The Wedding Feast, just as those who are not The Bride in The Church of God.

How can Christ remarry Israel since He divorced her? The Law doesn't permit it (Deuteronomy 24)?

When Jesus died for the sins of the world it also involved all of Israel. Paul said when Jesus died for your sins He reconciled you to God and therefore, all of Israel and the **unwise virgins** as well, can once again be guests at The Wedding Feast (Romans 5:10). Those Israelites, who are The Bride of Christ, can be remarried to Jesus because once Christ died; that first marriage dissolved. The remnant of Israel can now remarry Jesus, The Groom (Romans 7:2).

The Bride of Christ can only be those, whether of Israel or The Church of God, who continue to grow **spiritually** till they mature to have Christ "**in them**," which is "agapè" **love**!

Wedding Feast Invitations

Who can come to The Wedding Feast becomes the question now that you have resolved who The Bride is. The Bride includes only those Israelites and an innumerable number Gentiles who grow **spiritually**, having "agapè" **love**. They must become spiritual Israelites, like Christ.

All others must first become as "**sheep**" to be guests at The Wed-

ding Feast. Goats cannot be **guests**. They must first go into The Lake of Fire (Matthew 25:30-46). Those written in The Book of Life include The Groom, The Bride and **the guests**, just as in any *Marriage Registry*.

There are three periods of time when The Wedding Feast invitations are sent out into the world. That is why Jesus came to **save** the world (I John 4:14). What three periods in history and in the future are included in these invitations?

- 1 Matthew 22:3 merely states only those bidden to The Marriage Feast are invited. Nothing is said that the feast is ready to take place. When was this? Jude 14 answers the question. **“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints.”**

Enoch, The Prophet of God, was God's servant to announce the coming of Christ with **the saints** or Bride. It states he was the 7th from Adam. This discloses the time frame for this wedding invitation.

Who are the seven Prophets, Jude is relating to in Enoch's prophecy? Genesis 5 lists the genealogy of Adam to Noah. In this genealogy, Adam looked like God and each progeny looked like the other. This isn't Adam's chronological genealogy, as Cain is excluded along with Abel. Why?

This genealogy includes all of Adam's children who look like God and call upon **the name** of The Lord (Genesis 4:25-26). These are all God's servants announcing *The Gospel* of Christ. They are Prophets, with Noah being the eighth **preacher of righteousness** (II Peter 2:5).

Now you know those first bidden to The Wedding Feast are those who call upon God. The Wedding Feast, however, was not ready. By the time Noah preached, the world had forgotten God and only had evil thoughts in their hearts. No “agapè” love. God destroyed that world with a flood except for Noah and his family. That concludes the first wedding invitation.

The second invitation is quite different:

- 2 Matthew 22:4-7 reveals the next invitation was also only sent to “certain ones bidden.” But, this time The Wedding Feast is ready to take place. **“Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings *are* killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.”** [Can’t be any clearer. This is Christ’s first coming when He became human on earth. Jesus came the first time to marry His wife, Israel, after He would die for her and then Israel would be reconciled to God.]

Notice the event in Zechariah 9:9-10: **“Rejoice greatly, O daughter [Judah] of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off: and he shall speak peace unto the heathen [Gentiles]: and his dominion *shall be* from sea *even* to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth.”**

This is prophecy regarding Christ’s first coming. When Jesus came, He brought **salvation** and world peace as previously covered. There was to be **no second coming**. The Marriage Feast, as

the parable reveals, was being prepared for the marriage.

After Christ's death, if Judah would have accepted The Groom, Jesus would have defeated The Fourth Beast, Rome and **the millennium** would have started. Christ and The Bride, Israel, would have invited the rest of the world (Gentiles) to The Wedding Feast. That is what **the millennium** is all about. It's very close to the time to have Christ save the world (I John 4:14).

Now to read how this prophecy played out! Matthew 21:1 gives Zachariah's very same account of Jesus riding the colt into Jerusalem and hailed as their King. The Jewish hierarchy reprimanded the people for proclaiming Jesus, The King. The people fearing their leaders rejected their King, who was to bring world peace and salvation. Here is Christ's reply in Matthew 21:42-43: "**Did ye never read [prophecy] in the scriptures, The stone [temple] which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner [New Jerusalem]: this is the Lord's doings, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore I say unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you [Judah] and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits [agàpè] there of.**"

This is **the second wedding invitation** when the actual marriage could have taken place, but Judah rejected their Messiah, The Groom. Now the curse upon the world begins as prophesied in Malachi 4:6.

- 3 **Now for the third and final wedding invitation. This invitation is totally different than the other two. When The King hears they rejected His Son and that the invitation to The Wedding Feast was also turned down, God was full of wrath (Matthew 22:7).**

In 70 A.D. God allowed Titus to come into Jerusalem and destroy **the temple** and Jerusalem. From this time a new invitation was sent out which was completely different than the previous two invitations. In Matthew 22:3 God told His servants (Apostles), The Wedding is ready (time had arrived), but when they which were bidden (Judah) were not worthy.

They still had a wrong heart. So the new invitation went out, **“Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage”** (Matthew 22:9).

Instead of **“a select chosen group”** God extends The Wedding Feast invitation to anyone who desires to come (Acts 10). Read Romans 11 where The Gentiles (the world) are grafted into the natural olive tree.

Meanwhile **who was intended to be first is now last**, except for **“a remnant”** of Israel (Matthew 22:10). God’s Apostles go to the world as Jesus told them in Acts 1:8. Notice, this time both the **“good”** and **“bad”** are invited.

Christianity is a mixture of good and bad as opposed to everyone being at the same level of faith. Just as Judah is filled with differing faiths or groups, so is Christianity. Even Muslims are split between terrorists and non-terrorists. The three majority religions of the world are divided between good and bad. God calls this Babylon or confusion. This third Wedding Invitation goes out to include the whole world.

When The Wedding finally occurs and during **the feast, if** one enters The Wedding with improper attire – what happens? He is thrown out into outer darkness and the parable concludes with the following: **“For many are called, but few chosen”** (Matthew

22:14). Now to answer the question when will Christ **return** and be with His Bride.

Purpose Of *The Book Of Revelation*

God's Story, The Bible, is the story of God's "**will**" to be "all and in all" by and through His Son, Jesus. Christ fulfills His Father's "**will**" by His Godly marriage to His Bride. Both The Groom and The Bride must be worthy or have "agapè" **love**.

To sum it up, *The Book of Revelation* concludes *The Holy Scriptures* as to how The Son of God concludes His Father's "**testament**" or "**will**." History and prophecy of the world always results in chaos or violence when God is not included. Finally, The Church of God and Israel are confronted with the final **battle** before Christ's **return** to save them and all humanity from **world suicide**. Some of God's **church** and **the remnant of Israel** must go through The Great Tribulation to become worthy, to become Christ's Bride. The theme of *The Book of Revelation* opens with the following announcement: "**Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen**" (Revelation 1:7).

The entire world **repents** – including those who killed Him. But first Christ must come "**in the clouds**." Now to find **the biblical answer** as to when Christ **returns**.

This *Book of Revelation* is written to Christ's **seven churches** who have corrupted themselves by the end of The First Century with one exception, The Philadelphians. Notice, The Philadelphian Church, a church of brotherly love (Philia), has only a little strength. *Revelation* is written as a warning to Christianity and the remnant of Israel, who are one of God's two servants and Prophets

(Romans 11).

What is the warning? Jesus warns His two servants about Babylon and tells them to come out of it (Revelation 18:4). To come out of Babylon they must spiritually grow in God's "agapè" love.

Revelation 5:1-9 prophesies that Jesus, as The Groom, must prove Himself worthy. How? Revelation 5:9 declares that Jesus became worthy by dying for His Bride and by **redeeming** Her. Because Christ is worthy, having "agapè" love, He can open **the seven seals**, the world's curse, plus the **seven trumps** and **God's wrath** of **the seven last plagues**. By so doing, **the time** of The Wedding Feast is ready and now there is only one question to answer before Jesus, The Messiah **returns**. Revelation 19:1-8 answers the question when Jesus **returns** for His Bride. Prior to Revelation 19, Revelation 18 announces the destruction of Babylon. Then Revelation 19:7 declares, "**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath MADE HERSELF READY.**"

When does Christ **return**? It is not a date or time. What is "the event" which triggers Christ's **return**? **When The Bride is ready!** This is plain and very simple!

That is why Peter said in II Peter 1:19 that The Apostles had a more **sure word of prophecy**. What was this certain **word of prophecy**? The answer is in II Peter 3:8-10. Peter's prophecy declares Christ's **return** is not predicated on a date or time. It is an event and that event could be thousands of years away, because God **will wait** until none should be lost but all come to repentance! God's "**will**" is to have Jesus, The Groom **save the world** (I John 4:14). How?

First Jesus proved He was worthy, then The Bride had to get prepared and be ready – or worthy just like her Husband. God, The Father would not give the ultimate gift of **salvation** until God is “all and in all” (I Corinthians 15:28).

Once Jesus **returns** and His Bride is ready, The Millennium begins, which is the conclusion of **the engagement period** when the world is invited to The Wedding Feast. Read about this feast in Revelation 21 and 22. Read the books *Revelation Uncovered* and *The White Throne Judgment* for more details.

Jesus gives these final words in *The Bible*: “**And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done. Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book**” (Revelation 22:6-7).

John concludes *Revelation* and *God's Story* with, “**The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen**” – so be it!